## On ？2－i ndi ces for ground states of fermionic chai ns

| 著者 | Chr is Bour ne，Her nann Schul z Bal des |
| :--- | :--- |
| j ournal or <br> publ i cat i on titl e | Revi ews i n nat hemat i cal physi cs |
| vol une | 32 |
| nunber | 9 |
| page range | 2050028 |
| year | $2020-03$ 16 |
| URL | ht t p：／／hdl ．handl e．net／10097／00131042 |

# On $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-indices for ground states of fermionic chains 

Chris Bourne ${ }^{1}$, Hermann Schulz-Baldes ${ }^{2}$ *<br>${ }^{1}$ AIMR, Tohoku University, Sendai, and RIKEN iTHEMS, Wako, Japan<br>${ }^{2}$ Department Mathematik, FAU Erlangen-Nürnberg, Germany

February 12, 2020


#### Abstract

For parity-conserving fermionic chains, we review how to associate $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-indices to ground states in finite systems with quadratic and higher-order interactions as well as to quasifree ground states on the infinite CAR algebra. It is shown that the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow provides a topological obstruction for two systems to have the same $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index. A rudimentary definition of a $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label for a class of parity-invariant and pure ground states of the one-dimensional infinite CAR algebra is also provided. Ground states with differing phase labels cannot be connected without a closing of the spectral gap of the infinite GNS Hamiltonian. MSC2010: 81T75, 81V70, 58J30


## Contents

1 Introduction ..... 2
2 Preliminaries ..... 5
2.1 Ground states of fermionic systems ..... 5
2.2 The $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow ..... 7
3 Finite quadratic chains ..... 9
3.1 Basic setup ..... 9
3.2 Bogoliubov transformation ..... 10
3.3 Majorana representation ..... 11
3.4 Kitaev's $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index for finite quadratic Hamiltonians ..... 12
3.5 The parity operator ..... 13
3.6 The Kitaev model on an open chain ..... 14
3.7 The Kitaev model on a closed chain ..... 18
3.8 Other examples ..... 21
3.9 Ground state gap ..... 24
3.10 Flux insertion and $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow ..... 27

[^0]4 Higher order interactions on finite chains ..... 30
4.1 Gapped ground states in finite volume systems ..... 30
4.2 The interacting Kitaev chain ..... 30
4.3 Flux insertion and gap closing in the closed chain ..... 31
5 Quasifree ground states of the infinite CAR algebra ..... 35
5.1 Quasifree states of the self-dual CAR algebra ..... 35
5.2 Quasifree dynamics and BdG Hamiltonians ..... 36
5.3 Quasifree ground states on the even subalgebra ..... 39
5.4 The index map on canonical transformations ..... 39
$5.5 \quad$ A $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index on pairs of BdG Hamiltonians ..... 41
5.6 Connections to $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow ..... 41
$6 \quad \mathbf{A} \mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index for pure gapped ground states ..... 44
6.1 The Jordan-Wigner transform ..... 44
6.2 Ground states of the $X Y$-Hamiltonian ..... 46
6.3 The split property ..... 48
6.4 The $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label ..... 49
6.5 Changes in the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label ..... 54
6.6 Concluding remarks ..... 56

## 1 Introduction

Rigorous analysis of condensed matter systems using topological methods has made substantial progress in the past 10-15 years. Topological insulators and superconductors have shown that invariants from differential topology (and their extensions in noncommutative geometry) give rise to stable and novel physical phenomena, see [62] for references.

There have also been significant developments in the analytical understanding of gapped ground states of many-body spin systems and their relation to topological order. Improved Lieb-Robinson bounds and the area law for the decay of entanglement entropy [38] are among many non-trivial results concerning properties of uniformly gapped ground states of frustration-free spin systems [10, 11, 12, 56]. See [54] for a comprehensive review. In dimensions greater than one, where braiding may occur, analytic results are much harder to obtain, though important examples such as Kitaev's toric code [45] can be treated within the framework of frustration-free ground states. Newer methods for higher-dimensional spin systems are also in development [26]. There has also been several results concerning stability of topological invariants such as the Hall conductance in interacting fermion systems $[7,8,9,35,40,50]$.

There have been efforts in the physics community to connect these two areas of topological physics via the study of interacting topological phases. While a precise characterisation of interacting phases remains in development, following a proposal of Kitaev, it is currently expected that symmetry protected topological (SPT) phases of gapped ground states are described using a generalised cohomology theory $[34,64,69]$. Roughly speaking, such theories construct a homotopy group of deformation classes of invertible topological field theories or short-range entangled states with specified additional input, e.g. symmetries and dimension. For the case of fermions, which we focus on in this manuscript, $\mathbb{Z}_{2^{-}}$ graded tensor networks provide a convenient toolset to construct such field theories, see [20, 21, 37, 66].

The goals of this paper are much more modest. Our aim is to review the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index associated to onedimensional fermionic ground states considered by Kitaev [44] as an indication of Majorana fermions at the boundary of one-dimensional superconducting wires. This $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label is now regarded as the one-dimensional SPT phase of gapped and parity-symmetric fermionic systems without additional symmetries. While some properties of infinite systems and the thermodynamic limit can be obtained by a careful treatment of finite systems, rigourous studies of infinite fermionic systems directly are less common. One reason is that ground states in infinite systems are generally understood via techniques from operator algebras and, as such, require a more involved framework.

The $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-indices for ground states of finite fermionic chains with quadratic and higher-order interactions are first reviewed. We also consider $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-indices for quasifree ground states of infinite systems, which generalise the finite-dimensional $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index. The exposition on quasifree ground states is closely related to work by Araki, Evans and Matsui on the XY-chain and the phase transition of the 2dimensional Ising model [1, 2, 3]. Many have noted that the quadratic finite Kitaev chain is the same as the quantum Ising chain under the Jordan-Wigner transform. But a more systematic treatment on the connections between spin chains in quantum statistical mechanics and fermionic gapped ground state phases, particularly in infinite systems, appears to be absent in the literature. As such, these concepts are reviewed in detail.

A key connection is also shown between the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-ground state index and the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow recently studied in [24]. (Let us stress that the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow is unrelated to the spectral flow of the quasiadiabatic evolution of ground states [54], see Section 2.2.) Indeed for finite quadratic chains and quasifree ground states of the CAR algebra, the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow is shown to encode the topological obstruction for two Hamiltonians to have the same $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-ground state index. For systems with periodic or anti-periodic boundary conditions, this topological obstruction can be detected via the insertion of a flux quanta through a local cell and the associated $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow. Finite chains with twisted boundary conditions as studied in [43] also provide an example. We remark that fermionic interactions with periodic or anti-periodic boundary conditions become highly non-local if one takes the Jordan-Wigner transformation and considers the corresponding bosonic Hamiltonian. Therefore, such Hamiltonians will in general violate the Local Topological Quantum Order condition used in $[49,52]$ to show stability of a ground state gap.

One of the motivations to study flux insertions is to analyse topological properties of Hamiltonians and their ground states. By connecting flux insertion to $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-spectral flow, an index-theoretic construction, the topological nature of the ground states under consideration becomes manifest. Flux insertion has also been used in higher-dimensional systems to construct a many-body index for charge transport [8] as well as show the stability of the Hall conductance under interactions [7]. These observations open a potential pathway to study topological invariants of higher dimensional interacting systems of fermions by inserting (non-abelian) monopoles as in [25, 27].

While much of the manuscript is review, we do provide a candidate for a $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index of pure, gapped and parity-invariant ground states on the one-dimensional infinite CAR algebra that can be used as a phase label. To the best of our knowledge, the construction is new, though it heavily relies on the split property of one-dimensional ground states [47, 48] as well as the infinite Jordan-Wigner transform [32, Chapter 6.5]. The use of the split property as a tool to characterise ground state SPT phases was first noted by Ogata [57]. Results from [54] give tools to show basic stability properties of this index, including invariance under a $C^{1}$-path of uniformly gapped Hamiltonians satisfying extra compatibility conditions. We also show that if two gapped ground states have differing phase labels,
then the spectral gap of the infinite GNS Hamiltonian must close for paths of ground states connecting the two systems. This gives us some confidence that the suggested phase label is a useful one.

## Outline

Section 2 gives a brief summary of the operator algebra approach to fermionic ground states and the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow. The paper is then divided into 2 relatively distinct parts corresponding to finite and infinite chains, where the characterisation of the ground state changes from the lowest-energy eigenvector to the operator algebraic definition.

Section 3 considers finite chains with Hamiltonians quadratic in the creation and annihilation operators. In this setting, the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index is defined as the homotopy type of a Bogoliubov transformation that diagonalises the Hamiltonian. The example of the Kitaev Hamiltonian is studied in detail. While the ground state $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index can in principle be defined for any positive quadratic Hamiltonian, it is in general much easier to compute for closed chains with periodic or anti-periodic boundary conditions. For chains with open boundary conditions, different phases can be differentiated by the existence or non-existence of Majorana boundary states. We also show that the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow gives a topological obstruction for two Hamiltonians to have the same $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index. The Martingale method is also used to show a uniformly bounded ground state energy gap for a large class of model Hamiltonians. For the case of closed chains, the insertion of a flux can close this gap and implement a non-trivial $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow. The Kitaev chain with twisted boundary conditions is such an example.

Higher order interactions on finite chains are studied in Section 4. A $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index for higher order interactions cannot be directly defined, but one can instead consider the ground state parity or Hamiltonians that can be connected to quadratic systems by a $C^{1}$-path with a uniformly bounded ground state gap. We mostly focus on the solvable Kitaev Hamiltonian with a quartic interaction studied in [42]. We consider a closed chain, where a local $\pi$-flux will induce a $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase change of ground states with a uniformly bounded ground state energy gap.

Section 5 considers infinite systems and ground states of the CAR algebra that come from quasifree dynamics, where equivalence of quasifree states is determined by a Hilbert-Schmidt condition. This condition is used to derive a $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index map for Bogoliubov transformations between systems with different quasifree dynamics. This infinite $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index gives a natural generalisation of the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index defined for finite quadratic chains. As in the finite-dimensional case, the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow gives a topological obstruction for two ground states to have the same index. In particular, a non-trivial $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow between gapped quasifree ground states will cause the ground state gap of the infinite GNS Hamiltonian to close.

Finally, a $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index is defined in Section 6 for a class of pure and parity-invariant states of the CAR algebra of a one-dimensional lattice. We first review the Jordan-Wigner transform and show how for quasifree states the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index is connected to the purity of the ground state of the Pauli algebra of spins. This example then motivates our more general definition of the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label, which we show is well-defined for pure states satisfying the split property. The new $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index does not arise as a skew-adjoint Fredholm operator with a $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index in general, but the two indices coincide when they are both defined. Elementary properties of this new $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index are then shown, in particular that the ground state gap must close on paths connecting ground states of differing phase label. We conclude with some comments on future research directions.

## 2 Preliminaries

### 2.1 Ground states of fermionic systems

We will assume some familiarity with the $C^{*}$-algebraic approach to quantum statistical mechanics. A standard reference is [17, 18]. An overview of modern techniques can be found in [54]. We first recall the CAR algebra for general (potentially infinite) systems. Let $\mathcal{H}$ be a separable Hilbert space. The CAR algebra $A^{\text {car }}(\mathcal{H})$ is the $C^{*}$-algebra generated by the identity and elements $\mathfrak{a}(v), v \in \mathcal{H}$ such that $v \mapsto \mathfrak{a}(v)$ is anti-linear and with anti-commutation relations

$$
\left\{\mathfrak{a}\left(v_{1}\right), \mathfrak{a}\left(v_{2}\right)\right\}=0, \quad\left\{\mathfrak{a}\left(v_{1}\right), \mathfrak{a}\left(v_{2}\right)^{*}\right\}=\left\langle v_{1}, v_{2}\right\rangle_{\mathcal{H}}
$$

If $\mathcal{H}=\ell^{2}(\Lambda)$ for $\Lambda$ a countable set, then by taking the standard basis $\left\{\delta_{j}\right\}_{j \in \Lambda}$ of $\ell^{2}(\Lambda)$, we can simplify the definition of $A_{\Lambda}^{\text {car }}=A^{\text {car }}\left(\ell^{2}(\Lambda)\right)$ as the universal $C^{*}$-algebra generated by the elements $\left\{\mathfrak{a}_{j}\right\}_{j \in \Lambda}$ with $\left\{\mathfrak{a}_{j}, \mathfrak{a}_{k}\right\}=0$ and $\left\{\mathfrak{a}_{j}, \mathfrak{a}_{k}^{*}\right\}=\delta_{j, k} \mathbf{1}$, see [18, Section 5.2.2] for example.

If $\Lambda^{\prime} \subset \Lambda$ there is a natural embedding $A_{\Lambda^{\prime}}^{\text {car }} \subset A_{\Lambda}^{\text {car }}$. In particular, if we let $\mathcal{P}_{0}(\Lambda)$ denote the set of finite subsets of $\Lambda$, there is the quasilocal structure

$$
A_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{car}} \cong \overline{\left(A_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{car}}\right)_{\mathrm{loc} .}} C^{*}, \quad\left(A_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{car}}\right)_{\mathrm{loc} .}=\bigcup_{X \in \mathcal{P}_{0}(\Lambda)} A_{X}^{\mathrm{car}}
$$

The CAR algebra $A^{\text {car }}(\mathcal{H})$ comes equipped with the parity automorphism $\Theta$ defined by

$$
\Theta(\mathfrak{a}(v))=-\mathfrak{a}(v), \quad \Theta\left(\mathfrak{a}(v)^{*}\right)=-\mathfrak{a}(v)^{*}, \quad v \in \mathcal{H} .
$$

One has $\Theta^{2}=$ Id. If $\mathcal{H}=\ell^{2}(\Lambda)$, then by the quasilocal structure $\Theta$ is the unique extension of the automorphism $\Theta_{X}, X \in \mathcal{P}_{0}(\Lambda)$, such that

$$
\Theta_{X}(a)=\mathcal{P} a \mathcal{P}, \quad \mathcal{P}=(-1)^{\sum_{j \in X} a_{j}^{*} a_{j}}
$$

for all $a \in A_{X}^{\text {car }}$, see Section 3.5. The parity gives a decomposition $A^{\text {car }}(\mathcal{H}) \cong A^{\text {car }}(\mathcal{H})^{0} \oplus A^{\text {car }}(\mathcal{H})^{1}$, where $\Theta(a)=(-1)^{j} a$ for $a \in A^{\text {car }}(\mathcal{H})^{j}$. Elements in $A^{\text {car }}(\mathcal{H})^{0}$ and $A^{\text {car }}(\mathcal{H})^{1}$ are called even and odd respectively.

Let us now restrict our attention to $\mathcal{H}=\ell^{2}(\Lambda)$ and $A_{\Lambda}^{\text {car }}$. An interaction $\Phi$ for a fermionic lattice is a map $\Phi: \mathcal{P}_{0}(\Lambda) \rightarrow A_{\Lambda}^{\text {car }}$ such that $\Phi(X)^{*}=\Phi(X)$ for all $X \in \mathcal{P}_{0}(\Lambda)$. An interaction is called even if its range is in $\left(A_{\Lambda}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}$. Even interactions are much better behaved with respect to Lieb-Robinson bounds, see [19, 53].

Given an interaction $\Phi$ and a finite set $X$, one can define the local Hamiltonian

$$
\mathbf{H}_{X}^{\Phi}=\sum_{Y \subset X} \Phi(Y) .
$$

An even interaction $\Phi$ is called frustration-free if $\Phi$ has finite range and for all $X \in \mathcal{P}_{0}(\Lambda)$

$$
\inf \sigma\left(\mathbf{H}_{X}^{\Phi}\right)=\sum_{Y \subset X} \inf \sigma(\Phi(Y)) .
$$

That is, the ground state of $\mathbf{H}_{X}^{\Phi}$ is simultaneously a ground state of all $\Phi(Y), Y \subset X$.

While one can only define the Hamiltonian of an interaction on finite subsets, the infinite system can be studied by examining the dynamics generated by the Hamiltonian

$$
\beta_{t}^{X}(a)=e^{i t \mathbf{H}_{X}} a e^{-i t \mathbf{H}_{X}}, \quad t \in \mathbb{R}, \quad a \in A_{X}^{\mathrm{car}} .
$$

As $X$ converges to $\Lambda$, one can guarantee that $\beta_{t}^{X}$ converges to a strongly continuous automorphism $\beta_{t} \in \operatorname{Aut}\left(A_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{car}}\right)$ for all $t \in \mathbb{R}$ if the interaction $\Phi$ satisfies the (fermionic) Lieb-Robinson bound [53, 19]. To obtain such bounds, we require the set $\Lambda$ to have a metric and our interaction to have mild decay properties as the distance between points increases. If $\Lambda=\mathbb{Z}^{\nu}$ and the interaction is finite range with a uniform bound on the coefficients, then the automorphism $\beta_{t}$ exists for all $t \in \mathbb{R}$.

Let us now fix an infinite dynamics, i.e. a strongly continuous map $\beta: \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \operatorname{Aut}\left(A_{\Lambda}^{\text {car }}\right)$. A state is a positive and continuous linear functional $\omega: A_{\Lambda}^{\text {car }} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$ such that $\omega\left(\mathbf{1}_{A_{\Lambda}}^{\text {car }}\right)=\mathbf{1}_{\mathbb{C}}$. Let $\delta$ be the generator of the dynamics $\beta$. Then $\omega$ is by definition a ground state on $A_{\Lambda}^{\text {car }}$ with respect to $\beta$ if

$$
\begin{equation*}
-i \omega\left(a^{*} \delta(a)\right) \geq 0, \quad a \in \operatorname{Dom}(\delta) . \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

The set of ground states with respect to a fixed action $\beta$ forms a convex and compact set with respect to the weak $*$-topology.

One can also consider the GNS triple $\left(\pi_{\omega}, \mathfrak{h}_{\omega}, \Omega_{\omega}\right)$ associated to a ground state $\omega$. Equation (1) implies that $\omega \circ \beta_{t}=\omega$ for all $t \in \mathbb{R}$. Therefore, there is a unitary operator $U_{\beta_{t}}$ on $\mathfrak{h}_{\omega}$ such that $\pi_{\omega} \circ \beta=\operatorname{Ad}_{U_{\beta_{t}}} \circ \pi_{\omega}$. Hence we obtain a 1-parameter group of unitaries acting on $\mathfrak{h}_{\omega}$. Thus, applying Stone's theorem, there is a self-adjoint operator $h_{\omega}$ such that

$$
e^{i t h_{\omega}} \pi_{\omega}(a) e^{-i t h_{\omega}}=\pi_{\omega}\left(\beta_{t}(a)\right), \quad e^{i t h_{\omega}} \Omega_{\omega}=\Omega_{\omega}
$$

which implies that $\Omega_{\omega}$ is a 0 -energy eigenvector for $h_{\omega}$. Furthermore, Equation (1) implies that $h_{\omega} \geq 0$ so $\Omega_{\omega}$ is a minimal eigenvector for $h_{\omega}$.

Definition 2.1 $A$ ground state $\omega$ on $\left(A_{\Lambda}^{\text {car }}, \beta\right)$ is called gapped if there is a constant $\gamma>0$ such that $\sigma\left(h_{\omega}\right) \cap(0, \gamma)=\emptyset$.

For a unique ground state $\omega$, the property of being gapped is equivalent (see e.g. [48]) to the condition that there is a $\gamma>0$ such that

$$
-i \omega\left(a^{*} \delta(a)\right) \geq \gamma\left(\omega\left(a^{*} a\right)-|\omega(a)|^{2}\right), \quad a \in\left(A_{\Lambda}^{\text {car }}\right)_{\text {loc. }} .
$$

Proposition 2.2 ([53]) Let $X \in \mathcal{P}_{0}(\Lambda)$ and $\mathbf{H}_{X}^{\Phi}$ be a finite-range Hamiltonian satisfying a LiebRobinson bound. If the spectral gap between lowest-energy eigenvalue of $\mathbf{H}_{X}^{\Phi}$ and the next-lowest eigenvalue is uniformly bounded in $|X|$, then the weak $*$-limit of the finite-volume ground states is a gapped ground state on $A_{\Lambda}^{\text {car }}$.

Suppose that $\omega$ is a $\Theta$-invariant state on $A_{\Lambda}^{\text {car }}$, namely $\omega \circ \Theta=\omega$. Then there exists a self-adjoint unitary $\Sigma$ on the GNS space $\mathfrak{h}_{\omega}$ with the properties

$$
\Sigma \pi_{\omega}(a) \Sigma=\pi_{\omega}(\Theta(a)), \quad \Sigma \Omega_{\omega}=\Omega_{\omega}
$$

Furthermore, we can decompose the GNS space

$$
\mathfrak{h}_{\omega}=\mathfrak{h}_{\omega}^{0} \oplus \mathfrak{h}_{\omega}^{1}, \quad \mathfrak{h}_{\omega}^{i}=\frac{1}{2}\left(1+(-1)^{i} \Sigma\right) \mathfrak{h}_{\omega}=\overline{\pi_{\omega}\left(\left(A_{\Lambda}^{\text {car }}\right)^{i}\right) \Omega_{\omega}} .
$$

If the system is finite and $\omega_{X}$ on $A_{X}^{\text {car }}$ is given by $\omega_{X}(a)=\langle\psi| a|\psi\rangle$, then $\omega_{X}$ is parity invariant if $|\psi\rangle$ is even or odd under $\mathcal{P}$. In particular, a parity-invariant state on $A_{X}^{\text {car }}$ need not come from only even lowest-energy eigenvectors.

### 2.2 The $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow

We now review the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow defined in [24] as a real analogue of the $\mathbb{Z}$-valued spectral flow defined by Atiyah-Patodi-Singer [4] and developed by Phillips [61]. The $\mathbb{Z}$-valued spectral flow gives a concrete expression for the isomorphism $\pi_{1}\left(\operatorname{Fred}_{*}^{\text {sa }}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{C}}\right)\right) \cong \mathbb{Z}$ with $\operatorname{Fred}_{*}^{\text {sa }}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{C}}\right)$ the self-adjoint Fredholm operators on a complex Hilbert space and with essential spectrum above and below 0 . In contrast, the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow measures the isomorphism $\pi_{1}\left(\operatorname{Fred}_{*}^{\text {sk }}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}\right)\right) \cong \mathbb{Z}_{2}$ with $\operatorname{Fred}_{*}^{\text {sk }}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}\right)$ the skew-adjoint Fredholm operators on a real Hilbert space with essential spectrum above and below the real axis.

Unfortunately, the term 'spectral flow' already appears in the study of stability properties of gapped ground states [54]. This spectral flow is distinct from the spectral flow considered by Atiyah-Patodi-Singer and Phillips. In this work, we will only focus on the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow and to reduce ambiguity will always include the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$ in the terminology.

## Finite dimensions

Let $\mathbb{R}^{N}$ be a real finite-dimensional Hilbert space with $T_{0}$ and $T_{1}$ invertible skew-adjoint matrices. By standard results in linear algebra, there exists an invertible matrix $A \in \mathrm{GL}\left(\mathbb{R}^{N}\right)$ such that $T_{1}=A T_{0} A^{*}$. The $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow detects if the orientation of the eigenvectors are inverted along the straightline path connecting $T_{0}$ to $T_{1}$.

Definition 2.3 Let $T_{0}$ and $T_{1}$ be invertible skew-adjoint operators on a finite-dimensional real Hilbert space and let $T_{1}=A T_{0} A^{*}$ with invertible $A$. The $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow of the straight-line path is given by

$$
\operatorname{Sf}_{2}\left(t \in[0,1] \mapsto(1-t) T_{0}+t T_{1}\right)=\operatorname{sgn} \operatorname{det}(A) \in \mathbb{Z}_{2}=\{-1,1\} .
$$

It is also simply denoted by $\mathrm{Sf}_{2}\left(T_{0}, T_{1}\right)$.
While the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow is defined on a real Hilbert space, we can also consider operators on complex Hilbert spaces that respect a fixed real structure.

Remark 2.4 Let us give more justification for the name $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-spectral flow. In the case of a complex Hilbert space, the $\mathbb{Z}$-valued spectral flow counts the eigenvalue crossings though 0 (with sign) of paths of self-adjoint matrices or Fredholm operators. In the case of skew-adjoint matrices and Fredholm operators on real Hilbert spaces, there is a symmetry of the spectrum about the real axis, $\overline{\sigma(T)}=\sigma(T)$. In particular, any eigenvalue crossings through 0 will be double degenerate and the $\mathbb{Z}$-valued spectral flow will vanish. Instead the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow measures if there is a parity change of the eigenvectors at the double degenerate crossing points. See [24] for more information.

## Infinite dimensions

We follow the approach of $\left[24\right.$, Section 5-6]. Fix a separable and real Hilbert space $\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}$. A complex structure on a real Hilbert space is a skew-adjoint unitary

$$
J \in \mathcal{B}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}\right), \quad J^{*}=-J, \quad J^{2}=-\mathbf{1}_{\mathcal{H}}
$$

We define the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow via a $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index map on pairs of skew-adjoint unitaries. To set notation, given the real Hilbert space $\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}$, we let $\mathcal{O}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}\right)$ be the orthogonal operators on $\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}, \mathcal{K}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}\right)$ be the compact operators and $\mathcal{Q}=\mathcal{B}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}\right) / \mathcal{K}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}\right)$ the Calkin algebra.

Proposition 2.5 ([24], Proposition 5.2) Consider the space

$$
\mathcal{J}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}\right)=\left\{\left(J_{0}, J_{1}\right) \in \mathcal{O}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}\right): J_{i}^{*}=-J_{i},\left\|J_{0}-J_{1}\right\|_{\mathcal{Q}}<2\right\}
$$

with the norm topology. The map

$$
\mathcal{J}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}\right) \ni\left(J_{0}, J_{1}\right) \mapsto \operatorname{Ind}_{2}\left(J_{0}, J_{1}\right)=(-1)^{\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{dim} \operatorname{Ker}\left(J_{0}+J_{1}\right)} \in \mathbb{Z}_{2}
$$

is continuous.
The above proposition is stated in [24] with the bound $\left\|J_{0}-J_{1}\right\|_{\mathcal{Q}}<\frac{1}{2}$, but we note that the result holds for $\left\|J_{0}-J_{1}\right\|_{\mathcal{Q}}<2$, see [16, Proposition 4.3] or [30, Section 5] for a proof.

If $\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}$ is finite-dimensional, then any pair of complex structures $\left(J_{0}, J_{1}\right)$ is an element of $\mathcal{J}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}\right)$ and

$$
(-1)^{\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{dim} \operatorname{Ker}\left(J_{0}+J_{1}\right)}=\operatorname{sgn} \operatorname{det}(A), \quad J_{1}=A J_{0} A^{*}
$$

Therefore the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index map recovers the finite-dimensional $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow.
Now consider a norm-continuous path $[0,1] \ni t \mapsto T_{t} \in \operatorname{Fred}_{*}^{\text {sk }}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}\right)$ with $T_{0}$ and $T_{1}$ invertible. One can consider the path $J_{t}=T_{t}\left|T_{t}\right|^{-1}$, where if $T_{t_{0}}$ has a non-trivial kernel, $J_{t_{0}}$ is completed by an arbitrary complex structure on its kernel to give a path of complex structures in $\mathcal{B}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}\right)$. The path $J_{t}$ is not continuous in $\mathcal{B}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}\right)$ but is continuous in $\mathcal{Q}$. The $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index map from Proposition 2.5 is now used to define the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow.

Definition 2.6 Let $\left\{T_{t}\right\}_{t \in[0,1]}$ be a norm-continuous path in $\operatorname{Fred}_{*}^{\mathrm{sk}}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}\right)$ with $T_{0}$ and $T_{1}$ invertible. Let $J_{t}=T_{t}\left|T_{t}\right|^{-1}$ and partition the interval $0=t_{0}<t_{1}<\cdots<t_{n}=1$ such that $\left\|J_{t_{j}}-J_{t_{j-1}}\right\|_{\mathcal{Q}}<2$. The $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow is given by

$$
\mathrm{Sf}_{2}\left(t \in[0,1] \mapsto T_{t}\right)=(-1)^{\sum_{j=1}^{n} \frac{1}{2} \operatorname{dim} \operatorname{Ker}\left(J_{t_{j-1}}+J_{t_{j}}\right)} \in \mathbb{Z}_{2}=\{-1,1\} .
$$

Let us list the key properties of the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow.
Theorem 2.7 ([24]) (i) The map $\mathrm{Sf}_{2}$ is independent of the choice of partition in the definition.
(ii) (Concatenation) If $\left\{T_{t}\right\}_{t \in[0,1]}$ and $\left\{T_{t}\right\}_{t \in[1,2]}$ are continuous paths in $\operatorname{Fred}_{*}^{\mathrm{sk}}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}\right)$ with invertible endpoints, then

$$
\mathrm{Sf}_{2}\left(t \in[0,2] \mapsto T_{t}\right)=\mathrm{Sf}_{2}\left(t \in[0,1] \mapsto T_{t}\right) \times \mathrm{Sf}_{2}\left(t \in[1,2] \mapsto T_{t}\right) .
$$

(iii) (Homotopy invariance) Let $\left\{T_{t}\right\}_{t \in[0,1]}$ and $\left\{\tilde{T}_{t}\right\}_{t \in[0,1]}$ be continuous paths in $\mathrm{Fred}_{*}^{\mathrm{sk}}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}\right)$ with invertible endpoints such that $T_{0}=\tilde{T}_{0}$ and $T_{1}=\tilde{T}_{1}$. If the two paths are connected by a continuous homotopy leaving endpoints fixed, then $\mathrm{Sf}_{2}\left(t \in[0,1] \mapsto T_{t}\right)=\mathrm{Sf}_{2}\left(t \in[0,1] \mapsto \tilde{T}_{t}\right)$.
(iv) The map $\mathrm{Sf}_{2}$ on loops in $\operatorname{Fred}_{*}^{\mathrm{sk}}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}\right)$ is a homotopy invariant and induces an isomorphism $\pi_{1}\left(\operatorname{Fred}_{*}^{\text {sk }}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}\right)\right) \cong \mathbb{Z}_{2}$.

Lastly, let us note that there is also an isomorphism $\pi_{1}\left(\operatorname{Fred}_{*}^{\text {sk }}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}\right)\right) \cong K O^{-2}(\mathrm{pt})$ [5]. Hence the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow also has a $K$-theoretic interpretation.

## 3 Finite quadratic chains

### 3.1 Basic setup

In this section, $\Lambda$ will denote a finite set with cardinality $|\Lambda|$. We consider the fermionic Fock space $\mathcal{F}_{\Lambda}=\mathcal{F}\left(\mathbb{C}^{|\Lambda|}\right)$ of antisymmetric tensors in the full Fock space $\bigoplus_{n}\left(\mathbb{C}^{|\Lambda|}\right)^{\otimes n}$. For any $j \in \Lambda$, the creation and annihilation operators, $\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}$ and $\mathfrak{a}_{j}$, satisfy the anticommutation relations

$$
\left\{\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}, \mathfrak{a}_{i}\right\}=\delta_{i, j} \mathbf{1}, \quad\left\{\mathfrak{a}_{j}, \mathfrak{a}_{i}\right\}=0 .
$$

A standard way to rewrite the Fock space is

$$
\mathcal{F}\left(\mathbb{C}^{|\Lambda|}\right) \cong \hat{\otimes}_{j \in \Lambda} \mathcal{F}\left(\ell^{2}(\{j\})\right) \cong \mathbb{C}^{2} \hat{\otimes} \cdots \hat{\otimes} \mathbb{C}^{2}
$$

Here $\hat{\otimes}$ is the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-graded tensor product of $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-graded vector spaces, where for $V \cong V^{0} \oplus V^{1}$ and $W \cong W^{0} \oplus W^{1}, V \hat{\otimes} W$ is $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-graded with

$$
(V \hat{\otimes} W)^{0} \cong V^{0} \otimes W^{0} \oplus V^{1} \otimes W^{1}, \quad(V \hat{\otimes} W)^{1} \cong V^{0} \otimes W^{1} \oplus V^{1} \otimes W^{0}
$$

Returning to the fermionic Fock space, $\mathcal{F}\left(\ell^{2}(\{j\})\right)=\mathbb{C}^{2}$ consists of two states, one is the empty and one the occupied state given by $\left|\Omega_{j}\right\rangle$ and $\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}\left|\Omega_{j}\right\rangle$ respectively. The vacuum of the whole chain is then $|\Omega\rangle=\hat{\otimes}_{j \in \Lambda}\left|\Omega_{j}\right\rangle$.

For the time being, we will restrict ourselves to Hamiltonians on $\mathcal{F}_{\Lambda}=\mathcal{F}\left(\mathbb{C}^{|\Lambda|}\right)$ that are quadratic in the creation and annihilation operators, i.e.

$$
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}=\sum_{j, k \in \Lambda} h_{j, k} \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{k}+\tilde{h}_{j, k} \mathfrak{a}_{j} \mathfrak{a}_{k}+\text { Adjoint }
$$

There there is a Bogoluibov-de Gennes (BdG) representation of this Hamiltonian. Introducing the column vectors $\mathfrak{a}=\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}\right)_{j \in \Lambda}$ and $\mathfrak{a}^{*}=\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}\right)_{j \in \Lambda}$ one then has the formal equation

$$
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}=\frac{1}{2}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
\mathfrak{a}^{*} & \mathfrak{a} \tag{2}
\end{array}\right) H_{\Lambda}\binom{\mathfrak{a}}{\mathfrak{a}^{*}}+\operatorname{Tr}(h) \mathbf{1}_{\mathcal{F}_{\Lambda}} .
$$

We will neglect the constant $\operatorname{Tr}(h) \mathbf{1}_{\mathcal{F}_{\Lambda}}$ as it is, at most, a shift in energy. The BdG Hamiltonian $H_{\Lambda}$ acts on the particle-hole space $\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}=\ell^{2}(\Lambda) \otimes \mathbb{C}^{2}$ and automatically has the (even) particle-hole symmetry (PHS)

$$
\begin{equation*}
K^{*} \overline{H_{\Lambda}} K=-H_{\Lambda}, \quad K=\mathbf{1} \otimes \sigma_{1} \tag{3}
\end{equation*}
$$

This means, in particular, that the off-diagonal entry of the BdG Hamiltonian is an anti-symmetric matrix.

Suppose that $\phi \in \mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}$ is a non-vanishing zero-energy eigenvector of $H_{\Lambda}$. Such a vector $\phi$ necessarily satisfies $K \bar{\phi}=\phi$ (after a phase was absorbed). Associated to this vector is an operator

$$
\mathfrak{b}_{\phi}=\phi^{t}\binom{\mathfrak{a}}{\mathfrak{a}^{*}},
$$

where $\phi^{t}=(\bar{\phi})^{*}$ is the transpose. The operator $\mathfrak{b}_{\phi}$ is self-adjoint and squares to $\mathbf{1}$ if $\|\phi\|=1$. Thus $\mathfrak{b}_{\phi}$ is a so-called Majorana operator. By construction, it commutes with $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}$. For kernels with degeneracy, Majorana operators can be constructed for each zero-energy state.

### 3.2 Bogoliubov transformation

We recall methods for diagonalising quadratic Hamiltonians by canonical transformations following standard treatments, e.g. [15] or [28]. The PHS (3) of the Hamiltonian can be interpreted as follows: $i H$ is in the Lie algebra of the group

$$
\mathcal{G}=\left\{A \in \mathrm{GL}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}\right): K^{*} \bar{A} K=A\right\} .
$$

Let $\mathcal{U}_{\mathrm{ph}}=\mathcal{G} \cap \mathcal{U}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}\right)$ denote the unitaries in this group:

$$
\mathcal{U}_{\mathrm{ph}}=\left\{W \in \mathrm{GL}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}\right): W^{*}=W^{-1}, \quad K^{*} \bar{W} K=W\right\} .
$$

We remark that the group $\mathcal{U}_{\mathrm{ph}}$ is naturally isomorphic to the orthogonal matrices on the real Hilbert space $\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}^{\mathbb{R}}=\left\{\psi \in \mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}: K \bar{\psi}=\psi\right\}$. Namely, for $\mathcal{O}_{n}$ the set of $n \times n$ real and orthogonal matrices

$$
C^{*} \mathcal{U}_{\mathrm{ph}} C=\mathcal{O}_{2 L}, \quad C=2^{-\frac{1}{2}}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\mathbf{1} & i \mathbf{1}  \tag{4}\\
\mathbf{1} & -i \mathbf{1}
\end{array}\right)
$$

by means of relations $C^{*}=C^{-1}$ and $C^{T} C=K$ with $K$ as in (3). Now, given $W \in \mathcal{U}_{\mathrm{ph}}$, one can define

$$
\begin{equation*}
\binom{\mathfrak{d}}{\mathfrak{d}^{*}}=W\binom{\mathfrak{a}}{\mathfrak{a}^{*}} . \tag{5}
\end{equation*}
$$

The particular form of $W$ assures that $\mathfrak{d}$ and $\mathfrak{d}^{*}$ are indeed mutually adjoint and that the CAR relations for $\mathfrak{d}$ and $\mathfrak{d}^{*}$ hold. A standard question is now whether (5) can be implemented by a unitary opertor $\mathbf{U}_{W}$ on Fock space in the sense that

$$
\mathfrak{d}=\mathbf{U}_{W}^{*} \mathfrak{a} \mathbf{U}_{W}
$$

(Note that $\mathbf{U}_{W}$ is not quadratic in a.) For a finite system, this is always possible, but in infinite dimension one has to impose a condition. It is sufficient to require off-diagonal entries of $W$ to be Hilbert-Schmidt $[63,55]$. Then the unitary $\mathbf{U}_{W}$ is called a Bogoliubov transformation, while $W$ is usually called the associated canonical transformation. Hence $\mathcal{U}_{\mathrm{ph}}$ is also called the group of canonical transformations.

Now, suppose that $|\Lambda|=L<\infty$ and $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}$ has the eigenvalues $\left\{E_{1}, E_{2}, \ldots, E_{L}\right\}$ with $0 \leq E_{1} \leq$ $\cdots \leq E_{L}$ (taking a shift if necessary to ensure that all eigenvalues are non-negative). Then the BdG Hamiltonian $H_{\Lambda}$ can be diagonalised by a canonical transformation $W \in \mathcal{U}_{\text {ph }}$, see e.g. [15, 28],

$$
W H_{\Lambda} W^{*}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
E & 0  \tag{6}\\
0 & -E
\end{array}\right), \quad E=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
E_{1} & & \\
& \ddots & \\
& & E_{L}
\end{array}\right)
$$

Using this particular canonical transformation, one has

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda} & =\frac{1}{2}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
\mathfrak{a}^{*} & \mathfrak{a}
\end{array}\right) W^{*} W H_{\Lambda} W^{*} W\binom{\mathfrak{a}}{\mathfrak{a}^{*}} \\
& =\frac{1}{2}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
\mathfrak{d}^{*} & \mathfrak{d}
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{cc}
E & 0 \\
0 & -E
\end{array}\right)\binom{\mathfrak{d}}{\mathfrak{d}^{*}}  \tag{7}\\
& =\frac{1}{2} \mathbf{U}_{W}^{*}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
\mathfrak{a}^{*} & \mathfrak{a}
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{cc}
E & 0 \\
0 & -E
\end{array}\right)\binom{\mathfrak{a}}{\mathfrak{a}^{*}} \mathbf{U}_{W} .
\end{align*}
$$

Rewriting Equation (7) using the CAR operations,

$$
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}=\sum_{j \in \Lambda} E_{j}\left(\mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}-\mathfrak{d}_{j} \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*}\right)=\sum_{j \in \Lambda} E_{j}\left(2 \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}-1\right)
$$

Therefore, because $E_{j} \geq 0$, any vector that is eliminated by all the $\mathfrak{d}_{j}$ with $E_{j}>0$ is a ground state of $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}$. In particular, if $\mathfrak{d}_{1} \mathfrak{d}_{2} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L}|\psi\rangle$ is non-zero, then it is a non-trivial ground state of $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}$. Using Lemma 3.5 below, it can be shown that such non-zero vectors exist.

### 3.3 Majorana representation

Recall Equation (4), where $C^{*} \mathcal{U}_{\mathrm{ph}} C=\mathcal{O}_{2 L}$. Let us extend this idea slightly and include a phase factor. Define

$$
\mathfrak{b}_{2 j-1}=e^{i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{j}+e^{-i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}, \quad \mathfrak{b}_{2 j}=-i e^{i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{j}+i e^{-i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*},
$$

for all $j \in \Lambda$. They satisfy the Clifford relations

$$
\mathfrak{b}_{j}^{*}=\mathfrak{b}_{j}, \quad\left\{\mathfrak{b}_{j}, \mathfrak{b}_{i}\right\}=2 \delta_{i, j} \mathbf{1}
$$

and one readily checks

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mathfrak{b}_{2 j-1} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j}=2 i\left(-\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}+\frac{1}{2} \mathbf{1}\right) \\
& \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}-\mathfrak{b}_{2 j-1} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+2}=2 i\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}+\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}\right)  \tag{8}\\
& \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}+\mathfrak{b}_{2 j-1} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+2}=2 i\left(e^{i \theta} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1} \mathfrak{a}_{j}+e^{-i \theta} \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

This also implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}=-\mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}-\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+e^{i \theta} \mathfrak{a}_{j} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+e^{-i \theta} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \tag{9}
\end{equation*}
$$

We can now write any quadratic Hamiltonian using the operators $\left\{\mathfrak{b}_{j}\right\}$. Let $\mathfrak{b}_{\text {ev }}=\left(\mathfrak{b}_{2 j}\right)_{j \geq 1}$ and $\mathfrak{b}_{\text {od }}=\left(\mathfrak{b}_{2 j-1}\right)_{j \geq 1}$ be the column vectors of Majorana's with even and odd index respectively with $\mathfrak{b}=\binom{\mathfrak{b}_{\text {od }}}{\mathfrak{b}_{\text {ev }}}$. Then

$$
\mathfrak{b}=2^{\frac{1}{2}} C_{\theta}^{*}\binom{\mathfrak{a}}{\mathfrak{a}^{*}}, \quad C_{\theta}^{*}=2^{-\frac{1}{2}}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
e^{i \frac{\theta}{2}} & e^{-i \frac{\theta}{2}} \\
-i e^{i \frac{\theta}{2}} & i e^{-i \frac{\theta}{2}}
\end{array}\right)=C^{*}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
e^{i \frac{\theta}{2}} & 0 \\
0 & e^{-i \frac{\theta}{2}}
\end{array}\right)
$$

One now obtains the Majorana representation of the Hamiltonian

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}=\sum_{j, k=1}^{2 L} \alpha_{j, k} \mathfrak{b}_{j} \mathfrak{b}_{k}=\frac{i}{2} \mathfrak{b}^{t} A_{\Lambda} \mathfrak{b} \tag{10}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the transpose $\mathfrak{b}^{t}$ is a row vector and $A_{\Lambda}=-\frac{i}{2} C_{\theta}^{*} H_{\Lambda} C_{\theta}$ is real and skew-symmetric.
Let us consider the diagonalisation of the operator $A_{\Lambda}=-\frac{i}{2} C_{\theta}^{*} H_{\Lambda} C_{\theta}$. Following standard treatments, e.g. [15], there is an orthogonal matrix $V \in \mathcal{O}_{2 L}, V=C_{\theta}^{*} W C_{\theta}$ for $W \in \mathcal{U}_{\mathrm{ph}}$ such that

$$
V A_{\Lambda} V^{*}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & E  \tag{11}\\
-E & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

Then

$$
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}=\frac{i}{2} \mathfrak{b}^{t} V^{*} V A_{\Lambda} V^{*} V \mathfrak{b}=\frac{i}{2} \mathfrak{b}^{t} V^{*}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & E \\
-E & 0
\end{array}\right) V \mathfrak{b}=\frac{i}{2} \tilde{\mathfrak{b}}^{t}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & E \\
-E & 0
\end{array}\right) \tilde{\mathfrak{b}},
$$

where $\tilde{\mathfrak{b}}=V \mathfrak{b}$ and $\left\{\tilde{\mathfrak{b}}_{j}\right\}_{j=1}^{2 L}$ also satisfy the Clifford relations. Hence

$$
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}=i \sum_{j=1}^{L} E_{j} \tilde{\mathfrak{b}}_{2 j-1} \tilde{\mathfrak{b}}_{2 j}
$$

and the ground state space of $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}$ is determined by the -1 eigenspaces of the commuting self-adjoint unitaries $\left\{i \tilde{\mathfrak{b}}_{2 j-1} \tilde{\mathfrak{b}}_{2 j}\right\}_{j=1}^{L}$. These eigenstates can be written out similar to the end of Section 3.2. Furthermore, we note that

$$
\operatorname{dim} \operatorname{Ker}\left(\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}\right)=\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{dim} \operatorname{Ker}\left(A_{\Lambda}\right)
$$

### 3.4 Kitaev's $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index for finite quadratic Hamiltonians

Definition 3.1 ([44]) The Kitaev index of a strictly positive quadratic Hamiltonian $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}=\frac{i}{2} \mathfrak{b}^{t} A_{\Lambda} \mathfrak{b}$ is defined as the sign of the Pfaffian

$$
j\left(\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}\right)=\operatorname{sgn} \operatorname{Pf}\left(A_{\Lambda}\right) .
$$

Diagonalising the Hamiltonian as in (11) and using properties of the Pfaffian,

$$
\operatorname{Pf}\left(A_{\Lambda}\right)=\operatorname{det}(V) \operatorname{Pf}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & E \\
-E & 0
\end{array}\right)=\operatorname{det}(V) \prod_{j=1}^{L} E_{j}
$$

If $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}$ is strictly positive (so $H_{\Lambda}$ has a spectral gap around 0 ), then the Pfaffian is well-defined and its sign is determined by the sign of $\operatorname{det}(V)$. Furthermore, since $V=C_{\theta}^{*} W C_{\theta}$ for $W \in \mathcal{U}_{\mathrm{ph}}$ as in (6),

$$
\begin{equation*}
j\left(\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}\right)=\operatorname{sgn} \operatorname{Pf}\left(A_{\Lambda}\right)=\operatorname{sgn} \operatorname{det}(V)=\operatorname{sgn} \operatorname{det}(W), \tag{12}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies that $j\left(\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}\right)$ is independent of the parameter $\theta$.
Remark 3.2 The Kitaev index is connected to the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow in finite dimensions by

$$
\begin{equation*}
j\left(\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}\right)=\operatorname{Sf}_{2}\left(i H_{\Lambda}, W i H_{\Lambda} W^{*}\right)=\operatorname{Sf}_{2}\left(A_{\Lambda}, V A_{\Lambda} V^{*}\right) \tag{13}
\end{equation*}
$$

as $i H_{\Lambda}$ is an invertible operator on the real Hilbert space $\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}^{\mathbb{R}}=\left\{\psi \in \mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}: K \bar{\psi}=\psi\right\}$.
Proposition 3.3 Let $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(0)$ and $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(1)$ be quadratic and strictly positive Hamiltonians on $\mathcal{F}\left(\mathbb{C}^{L}\right)$. Then $j\left(\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(0)\right)=j\left(\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(1)\right)$ if and only if $\mathrm{Sf}_{2}\left(A_{\Lambda}(0), A_{\Lambda}(1)\right)=1$.

Proof. Recall that $j\left(\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(k)\right)=\operatorname{sgn} \operatorname{det}\left(V_{k}\right)=\operatorname{sgn} \operatorname{Pf}\left(A_{\Lambda}(k)\right)$ with $V_{k}$ the orthogonal matrix that diagonalises $A_{\Lambda}(k)$ for $k=0,1$. Because $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(0)$ and $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(1)$ are strictly positive, we can homotopy each $E_{j}$ to 1 without changing the sign of the Pfaffian. Having flattened the spectrum of the Hamiltonians,
both $A_{\Lambda}(0)$ and $A_{\Lambda}(1)$ will have the diagonal form $V_{k} A_{\Lambda}(k) V_{k}^{*}=J=\mathbf{1}_{L} \otimes i \sigma_{2}, k=0,1$. Thus the concatenation property of $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow implies that

$$
\operatorname{Sf}_{2}\left(A_{\Lambda}(0), A_{\Lambda}(1)\right)=\operatorname{Sf}_{2}\left(A_{\Lambda}(0), J\right) \operatorname{Sf}_{2}\left(J, A_{\Lambda}(1)\right)
$$

Because $\operatorname{Sf}_{2}\left(A_{\Lambda}(k), J\right)=\operatorname{sgn} \operatorname{det}\left(V_{k}\right)=j\left(\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(k)\right)$ for $k=0,1, c f$. Equation (13), the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow is non-trivial if and only if $j\left(\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(0)\right) \neq j\left(\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(1)\right)$.

We therefore see that the (finite-dimensional) $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow gives a topological obstruction for two Hamiltonians to have the same $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase.

Proposition 3.4 Let $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(0)$ and $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(1)$ be quadratic and strictly positive Hamiltonians and suppose $\mathrm{Sf}_{2}\left(A_{\Lambda}(0), A_{\Lambda}(1)\right)=-1$. Then along the path $[0,1] \ni t \mapsto \mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(t)$ connecting the Hamiltonians, there is some $t_{0} \in(0,1)$ such that $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}\left(t_{0}\right)$ has a 0 -energy state.
Proof. To every $t \in[0,1]$ there is an $A_{\Lambda}(t)$ associated to $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(t)$ by Equation (10) and the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow is determined by the path $A_{\Lambda}(t)$. If the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow is non-trivial, then there is some $t_{0}$ such that $A_{\Lambda}\left(t_{0}\right)$ has at least a double degenerate 0 -eigenvalue (see Remark 2.4). Because the eigenvalues of $A_{\Lambda}$ determine the spectrum of $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}$, in particular $\operatorname{dim} \operatorname{Ker}\left(\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}\right)=\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{dim} \operatorname{Ker}\left(A_{\Lambda}\right)$, it follows that $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}\left(t_{0}\right)$ has at least one 0 -energy state.

Combining the two previous propositions, if follows that if $j\left(\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(0)\right) \neq j\left(\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(1)\right)$, then the two Hamiltonians cannot be continuously connected without the appearance of a Majorana operator from a zero-energy state. We will give an example of a non-trivial $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-spectral flow via a flux insertion in Section 3.10.

### 3.5 The parity operator

The (fermionic and not spatial) parity operator is defined by

$$
\mathcal{P}=(-1)^{\mathbf{N}},
$$

where $\mathbf{N}=\sum_{j=1}^{L} \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}$ is the fermionic number operator on the chain $\Lambda=[1, L]$. It is a self-adjoint unitary:

$$
\mathcal{P}^{2}=1, \quad \mathcal{P}^{*}=\mathcal{P}
$$

and hence introduces a grading on the Fock space. Any Hamiltonian that is an even polynomial in the in the creation and annihilation operators $\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}$ and $\mathfrak{a}_{j}$ will commute with the parity operator and be of even degree. This includes higher-order interactions. Indeed, using

$$
(-1)^{\mathfrak{a}_{k}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{k}}=e^{i \pi \mathfrak{a}_{k}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{k}}=e^{i \pi\left(1-\mathfrak{a}_{k} \mathfrak{a}_{k}^{*}\right)}=-e^{-i \pi \mathfrak{a}_{k} \mathfrak{a}_{k}^{*}}=-e^{i \pi \mathfrak{a}_{k} \mathfrak{a}_{k}^{*}},
$$

one obtains

$$
\mathcal{P} \mathfrak{a}_{j} \mathcal{P}=-\mathfrak{a}_{j} .
$$

In this form, the parity symmetry is a subgroup of the $\mathrm{U}(1)$-charge conservation symmetry. As $\mathfrak{d}_{j}, \mathfrak{b}_{j}$ and $\tilde{\mathfrak{b}}_{j}$ are all linear combinations of $\mathfrak{a}$ and $\mathfrak{a}^{*}$ 's, one also has

$$
\mathcal{P} \mathfrak{d}_{j} \mathcal{P}=-\mathfrak{d}_{j}, \quad \mathcal{P} \mathfrak{b}_{j} \mathcal{P}=-\mathfrak{b}_{j}, \quad \mathcal{P} \tilde{\mathfrak{b}}_{j} \mathcal{P}=-\tilde{\mathfrak{b}}_{j},
$$

Using (8), we can express

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{P}=\prod_{j=1}^{L}(-1)^{\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}}=\prod_{j=1}^{L}(-1)^{\frac{1}{2}\left(\mathbf{1}+i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j-1} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j}\right)}=\prod_{j=1}^{L}\left(-i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j-1} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j}\right), \tag{14}
\end{equation*}
$$

where in the last step it was used that the $i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j-1} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j}$ are commuting self-adjoint unitaries.

### 3.6 The Kitaev model on an open chain

Let us fix a finite chain $\Lambda=\{1, \ldots, L\}$ and consider the Hamiltonian on $\mathcal{F}_{\Lambda}$ given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}=\sum_{j=1}^{L-1}\left(-w\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+\mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}\right)+\Delta \mathfrak{a}_{j} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+\bar{\Delta} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}\right)+\mu \sum_{j=1}^{L}\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}-\frac{1}{2}\right) . \tag{15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Here $w, \mu \in \mathbb{R}$ and $\Delta=|\Delta| e^{i \theta} \in \mathbb{C}$. As the operator $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}$ is quadratic, we can write the associated BdG Hamiltonian $H_{\Lambda}$ on the particle-hole space $\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}=\mathbb{C}^{L} \otimes \mathbb{C}^{2}$ :

$$
H_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
-w\left(S+S^{*}\right)-\mu & \bar{\Delta}\left(S^{*}-S\right)  \tag{16}\\
\Delta\left(S-S^{*}\right) & w\left(S+S^{*}\right)+\mu
\end{array}\right) .
$$

Here $S$ is the right shift on $\mathbb{C}^{L}$ with open boundary conditions:

$$
S=\sum_{j=1, \ldots, L-1}|j+1\rangle\langle j|=\left(\begin{array}{cccc}
0 & & & \\
1 & \ddots & & \\
& \ddots & \ddots & \\
& & 1 & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

The BdG Hamiltonian shows that $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}$ models a $p$-wave interaction.
Case: $w=\Delta=0$ (trivial chain)
Let us study the Kitaev chain in a few cases where the solutions are explicit. First, we consider the case $w=\Delta=0$ and so

$$
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}=\mu \sum_{j=1}^{L}\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}-\frac{1}{2}\right)=\frac{\mu}{2} \sum_{j=1}^{L} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j-1} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} .
$$

If $\mu \geq 0$, then the energy of $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\text {Kit }}$ is minimized by any state $|\psi\rangle$ such that $\mathfrak{a}_{j}|\psi\rangle=0$. Therefore, if $\mu>0$, fermionic vacuum $|\Omega\rangle$ gives the unique ground state.

## Case: $\mu=0, w=|\Delta|$ (non-trivial chain and quantum Ising model)

In the case $\mu=0$ and $\Delta=e^{i \theta} w$, the Hamiltonian takes the particularly simple form in the Majorana representation, namely with (9)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}=w \sum_{j=1}^{L-1}\left(-\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}-\mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}+e^{i \theta} \mathfrak{a}_{j} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+e^{-i \theta} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}\right)=i w \sum_{j=1}^{L-1} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1} . \tag{17}
\end{equation*}
$$

The Kitaev Hamiltonian with $w=|\Delta|$ can be directly mapped to the quantum Ising chain via the Jordan-Wigner transform. Namely, using the notation $\sigma_{k}^{x / y / z}$ to denote operators analogous to the Pauli matrices at site $k \in\{1, \ldots, L\}$, we define

$$
\sigma_{j}^{x}=\left(e^{-i \pi \sum_{k=1}^{j-1} \mathfrak{a}_{k}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{k}}\right) \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}, \quad \sigma_{j}^{y}=\left(e^{i \pi \sum_{k=1}^{j-1} \mathfrak{a}_{k}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{k}}\right) \mathfrak{a}_{j}, \quad \sigma_{j}^{z}=2 \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}-\mathbf{1}
$$

Then for $J_{x}=w$ and $h=\frac{\mu}{2}$, the Hamiltonian becomes

$$
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{spin}}=-J_{x} \sum_{j=1}^{L-1} \sigma_{j}^{x} \sigma_{j+1}^{x}-h \sum_{j-1}^{L} \sigma_{j}^{z} .
$$

The Hamiltonian $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\text {spin }}$ describes a quantum Ising chain. For completeness, we also recall the inverse Jordan-Wigner transform,

$$
\mathfrak{b}_{2 j-1}=\left(\prod_{k=1}^{j-1} \sigma_{k}^{z}\right) \sigma_{j}^{x}, \quad \mathfrak{b}_{2 j}=\left(\prod_{k=1}^{j-1} \sigma_{k}^{z}\right) \sigma_{j}^{y}
$$

which gives the fermionic (Majorana) representation.
Expressing $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\text {Kit }}$ in the Majorana representation, we see that only Majorana operators on different sites are coupled. Moreover, each of the summands $i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}$ in (17) is a self-adjoint unitary and thus allows to introduce a self-adjoint projection on Fock space

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{P}_{j}=\frac{1}{2}\left(\mathbf{1}+i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}\right) \tag{18}
\end{equation*}
$$

These projections commute $\left[\mathbf{P}_{j}, \mathbf{P}_{i}\right]=0$ and the Hamiltonian can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}=w \sum_{j=1}^{L-1}\left(2 \mathbf{P}_{j}-\mathbf{1}\right) . \tag{19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Another way to write the Hamiltonian is to build a new pair of creation and annihilation operators $\left\{\mathfrak{d}_{j}\right\}_{j=1}^{L-1}$ from the pair $\mathfrak{b}_{2 j}$ and $\mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}:$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{d}_{j}=\frac{1}{2}\left(\mathfrak{b}_{2 j}+i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}\right), \quad \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*}=\frac{1}{2}\left(\mathfrak{b}_{2 j}-i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}\right), \tag{20}
\end{equation*}
$$

or more explicitly

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathfrak{d}_{j} & =\frac{i}{2}\left(-e^{i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{j}+e^{-i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}+e^{i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+e^{-i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*}\right)  \tag{21}\\
\mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} & =\frac{i}{2}\left(-e^{i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{j}+e^{-i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}-e^{i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}-e^{-i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*}\right) \tag{22}
\end{align*}
$$

These operators satisfy again the CAR's:

$$
\left\{\mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*}, \mathfrak{d}_{i}\right\}=\delta_{i, j} \mathbf{1}, \quad\left\{\mathfrak{d}_{j}, \mathfrak{d}_{i}\right\}=0,
$$

and using

$$
\begin{equation*}
i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}=2 \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}-\mathbf{1} \tag{23}
\end{equation*}
$$

allow to write the Hamiltonian as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}=w \sum_{j=1}^{L-1}\left(2 \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}-\mathbf{1}\right), \quad \mathbf{P}_{j}=\mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j} \tag{24}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let us refer to this as the quantum Ising Kitaev Hamiltonian. Another key property of $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}$ in the non-trivial region are the two "dangling" Majorana operators $\mathfrak{b}_{1}$ and $\mathfrak{b}_{2 L}$ on the finite chain $\Lambda=[1, L]$, which influence the degeneracy of the spectrum. We set

$$
\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}=\frac{1}{2}\left(\mathfrak{b}_{2 L}+i \mathfrak{b}_{1}\right), \quad \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*}=\frac{1}{2}\left(\mathfrak{b}_{2 L}-i \mathfrak{b}_{1}\right) .
$$

which also satisfy the CAR's (together with the other $\mathfrak{d}_{j}$ ). In terms of the initial creation and annihilation operators,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}=\frac{i}{2}\left(-e^{i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{L}+e^{-i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}+e^{i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{1}+e^{-i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*}\right), \\
& \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*}=\frac{i}{2}\left(-e^{i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{L}+e^{-i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}-e^{i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{1}-e^{-i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Again one can define $\mathbf{P}_{\text {bd }}=\mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }}$ and, as in (23),

$$
\begin{equation*}
i \mathfrak{b}_{2 L} \mathfrak{b}_{1}=2 \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}-\mathbf{1} \tag{25}
\end{equation*}
$$

Turning our attention to the ground state space, we see that for $w \geq 0, \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle$ will minimize the energy. However, if $\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle$ is non-zero, then it is also a ground state. Furthermore, as these states have different parity (as $\mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }}$ is odd), then this shows the ground state space will have a double degeneracy. We will show that for every $L$, either $\mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle$ or $\mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle$ is non-zero and, along with $\mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle$, completely characterise the ground state space.

## An orthonormal basis in Fock space

Let us now use the the new CAR operators $\left\{\mathfrak{d}_{j}\right\}_{j \in \Lambda}$ to characterise a basis for the fermionic Fock space $\mathcal{F}_{\Lambda}$ that solves the quantum Ising/Kitaev Hamiltonian (24).

First let us rewrite the parity operator using $\left\{\mathfrak{d}_{j}\right\}_{j \in \Lambda}$. Starting from Equation (14),

$$
\mathcal{P}=\left(i \mathfrak{b}_{2 L} \mathfrak{b}_{1}\right) \prod_{j=1}^{L-1}\left(-i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}\right)=\left(i \mathfrak{b}_{2 L} \mathfrak{b}_{1}\right) \prod_{j=1}^{L-1}(-1)^{\mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}}=\left(i \mathfrak{b}_{2 L} \mathfrak{b}_{1}\right) \prod_{j=1}^{L-1}\left(\mathbf{1}-2 \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}\right),
$$

and finally using (25)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{P}=-\left(\mathbf{1}-2 \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}\right) \prod_{j=1}^{L-1}\left(\mathbf{1}-2 \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}\right) . \tag{26}
\end{equation*}
$$

It ought to be stressed that for this to hold one has to use $\mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }}=\frac{1}{2}\left(\mathfrak{b}_{2 L}+i \mathfrak{b}_{1}\right)$ and is not allowed to exchange $\mathfrak{b}_{2 L}$ and $\mathfrak{b}_{1}$, which is equivalent to exchanging $\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}$ with $\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*}$. This would produce a sign change. For occupation numbers $i_{\text {bd }}, i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1} \in\{0,1\}$, let us introduce the states

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle=2^{\frac{L-1}{2}} \mathfrak{d}_{1}^{\left(i_{1}\right)} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}^{\left(i_{L-1}\right)}|\Omega\rangle \tag{27}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\mathfrak{d}_{j}^{(0)}=\mathfrak{d}_{j}, \quad \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{(1)}=\mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*},
$$

for $j=1, \ldots, L-1$. The 0 in the first entry indicates that neither $\mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }}$ nor $\mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }}^{*}$ is involved. This will be modified later on. The parity of these states is easily read off of $\mathcal{P} \mathfrak{d}_{j} \mathcal{P}=-\mathfrak{o}_{j}$ and $\mathcal{P}|\Omega\rangle=|\Omega\rangle$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{P}\left|0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle=(-1)^{L-1}\left|0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle . \tag{28}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now one can obtain states of parity $(-1)^{L}$ by either applying $\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}$ or $\mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }}^{*}$ to these states. However, the following result shows that one of the outcomes vanishes.

Lemma 3.5 (i) $\left\langle 0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1} \mid 0 ; i_{1}^{\prime}, \ldots, i_{L-1}^{\prime}\right\rangle=\delta_{i_{1}, i_{1}^{\prime}} \cdots \delta_{i_{L-1}, i_{L-1}^{\prime}}$
(ii) If $L+\sum_{j=1}^{L-1} i_{j}=0 \bmod 2$, then

$$
\mathfrak{o}_{\mathrm{bd}}\left|0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle=0, \quad \| \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*}\left|0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle \|=1
$$

(iii) If $L+\sum_{j=1}^{L-1} i_{j}=1 \bmod 2$, then

$$
\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*}\left|0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle=0, \quad \| \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}\left|0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle \|=1
$$

Proof. (i) We focus on the diagonal case $i_{j}=i_{j}^{\prime}$. Then let us start with the following algebraic manipulation:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|\left|0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle \|^{2} & =2^{L-1}\left\langle\mathfrak{d}_{1}^{\left(i_{1}\right)} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}^{\left(i_{L-1}\right)} \Omega \mid \mathfrak{d}_{1}^{\left(i_{1}\right)} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}^{\left(i_{L-1}\right)} \Omega\right\rangle \\
& =2^{L-1}\left\langle\Omega \mid\left(\mathfrak{d}_{1}^{\left(i_{1}\right)}\right)^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{1}^{\left(i_{1}\right)} \cdots\left(\mathfrak{d}_{L-1}^{\left(i_{L-1}\right)}\right)^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}^{\left(i_{L-1}\right)} \Omega\right\rangle,
\end{aligned}
$$

because each $\left(\mathfrak{d}_{j}^{\left(i_{j}\right)}\right)^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{\left(i_{j}\right)}$ commutes with $\mathfrak{d}_{k}^{\left(i_{k}\right)}$. Now due to (24), each factor $\left(\mathfrak{d}_{j}^{\left(i_{j}\right)}\right)^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{\left(i_{j}\right)}$ is either $\mathbf{P}_{j}$ or $\mathbf{1}-\mathbf{P}_{j}$, pending on whether $i_{j}=0$ or $i_{j}=1$. Hence let us set $\mathbf{P}_{j}^{(0)}=\mathbf{P}_{j}$ and $\mathbf{P}_{j}^{(1)}=\mathbf{1}-\mathbf{P}_{j}$. Then

$$
\|\left|0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle \|^{2}=2^{L-1}\langle\Omega| \mathbf{P}_{1}^{\left(i_{1}\right)} \cdots \mathbf{P}_{L-1}^{\left(i_{L-1}\right)}|\Omega\rangle
$$

Now these projections commute and one can check using (21) and (22)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{P}_{j}^{\left(i_{j}\right)}|\Omega\rangle=\frac{1}{2}\left(\mathbf{1}+\left(1-2 i_{j}\right) e^{-i \theta} \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*}\right)|\Omega\rangle \tag{29}
\end{equation*}
$$

and so $\langle\Omega| \mathbf{P}_{j}^{\left(i_{j}\right)}|\Omega\rangle=\frac{1}{2}$ independently of the value of $i_{j}$. Iterating on this idea, $\|\left|0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle \|^{2}=1$, which shows the claim.
(ii) On the one hand, one has (28) so that

$$
\mathcal{P} \mathfrak{o}_{\mathrm{bd}}\left|0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle=(-1)^{L} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}\left|0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle
$$

On the other hand, due to the CAR's, $\mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j} \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{\left(i_{j}\right)}=i_{j} \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{\left(i_{j}\right)}$ and using Equation (26)

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{P} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}\left|0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle & =-\left(\mathbf{1}-2 \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}\right) \prod_{j=1}^{L-1}\left(\mathbf{1}-2 \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}\right) \mathfrak{o}_{\mathrm{bd}}\left|0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle \\
& =-\left(\mathbf{1}-2 \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}\right) \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}} \prod_{j=1}^{L-1}\left(\mathbf{1}-2 \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}\right)\left|0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle \\
& =-\left(\mathbf{1}-2 \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}\right) \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}} \prod_{j=1}^{L-1}(-1)^{i_{j}}\left|0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle \\
& =-\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}(-1)^{\sum_{j=1}^{L-1} i_{j}}\left|0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence if $L+\sum_{j=1}^{L-1} i_{j}$ is even, $\mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }}\left|0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle=0$. Now

$$
\begin{aligned}
\| \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*}\left|0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle \|^{2} & =\left\langle 0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right| \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*}\left|0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle \\
& =\left\langle 0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right|\left(\mathbf{1}-\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}\right)\left|0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle \\
& =\|\left|0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle \|^{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

The claim (iii) follows in the same manner.
Given the above lemma, let us now define the states

$$
\left|1 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle= \begin{cases}\mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }}^{*}\left|0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle & \text { if } L+\sum_{j=1}^{L-1} i_{j} \text { even },  \tag{30}\\ \mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }}\left|0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle & \text { if } L+\sum_{j=1}^{L-1} i_{j} \text { odd }\end{cases}
$$

The parity of these states is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{P}\left|1 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle=(-1)^{L}\left|1 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle . \tag{31}
\end{equation*}
$$

Comparing with (28), one sees that the first entry $i_{\mathrm{bd}}$ in $\left|i_{\mathrm{bd}} ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle$ indicates a parity change.
Proposition 3.6 The set $\left\{\left|i_{\mathrm{bd}} ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle: i_{\mathrm{bd}}, i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1} \in\{0,1\}\right\}$ is an orthogonal basis of $\mathcal{F}_{\Lambda}$.
Proof. Due to Lemma 3.5, it only remains to prove the following orthogonality relations:

$$
\left\langle 1 ; i_{1}^{\prime}, \ldots, i_{L-1}^{\prime} \mid 0 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle=0, \quad\left\langle 1 ; i_{1}^{\prime}, \ldots, i_{L-1}^{\prime} \mid 1 ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle=\delta_{i_{1}, i_{1}^{\prime}} \cdots \delta_{i_{L-1}, i_{L-1}^{\prime}} .
$$

The first claim follows because the two states have different parity. The second one is based on Lemma 3.5(i) and an argument as in the proof of Lemma 3.5(ii).

Let us also note that by the relation $\left(2 \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}-\mathbf{1}\right) \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{\left(i_{j}\right)}=(-1)^{i_{j}+1} \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{\left(i_{j}\right)}$ with $i_{j} \in\{0,1\}$ the occupation number, we deduce from Equation (24) that

$$
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}\left|i_{\mathrm{bd}} ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle=w\left(\sum_{j=1}^{L-1}(-1)^{i_{j}+1}\right)\left|i_{\mathrm{bd}} ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle .
$$

Therefore, the orthonormal basis $\left\{\left|i_{\mathrm{bd}} ; i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1}\right\rangle: i_{\mathrm{bd}}, i_{1}, \ldots, i_{L-1} \in\{0,1\}\right\}$ diagonalises the quantum Ising/Kitaev Hamiltonian (24). In particular, the ground state space of $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\text {Kit }}$ is spanned by $|0 ; 0, \ldots, 0\rangle$ and $|1 ; 0, \ldots, 0\rangle$.

### 3.7 The Kitaev model on a closed chain

The previous analysis on the Kitaev Hamiltonian was for systems with open boundary conditions. We can close up the chain with periodic or anti-periodic boundary conditions by heuristically choosing $\mathfrak{a}_{L+1}= \pm \mathfrak{a}_{1}$. Let us now consider the case of periodic and anti-periodic boundary conditions. This leads to the Hamiltonian

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}( \pm)= & \sum_{j=1}^{L-1}\left(-w\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+\mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}\right)+\Delta \mathfrak{a}_{j} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+\bar{\Delta} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}\right)+\mu \sum_{j=1}^{L}\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}-\frac{1}{2}\right) \\
& \pm\left(-w\left(\mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{1}+\mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{L}\right)+\Delta \mathfrak{a}_{L} \mathfrak{a}_{1}+\bar{\Delta} \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Clearly in the 'trivial phase' $w=\Delta=0$, then the Hamiltonian is the same as the trivial Hamiltonian with open boundary conditions and, hence, has the ground state $|\Omega\rangle$ for $\mu>0$.

In the non-trivial regime $\mu=0$ and $\Delta=e^{i \theta} w$, the Majorana representation of $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}( \pm)$ is as in (17) with the supplementary summand $i w \mathfrak{b}_{2 L} \mathfrak{b}_{1}$ which has to be evaluated as in (9):

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}( \pm)=i w \sum_{j=1}^{L-1} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1} \pm i w \mathfrak{b}_{2 L} \mathfrak{b}_{1} . \tag{32}
\end{equation*}
$$

Assuming non-negative $w$, the ground state space of $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}( \pm)$ is built from the -1 eigenstates of the commuting even self-adjoint unitaries $\left\{i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}\right\}_{j=1}^{L-1}$ and the $\mp 1$ eigenstate of $i \mathfrak{b}_{2 L} \mathfrak{b}_{1}$,

$$
\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{GS}}^{ \pm} \cong \frac{1}{2}\left(1 \mp i \mathfrak{b}_{2 L} \mathfrak{b}_{1}\right) \prod_{j=1}^{L-1} \frac{1}{2}\left(1-i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}\right) \cdot \mathcal{F}\left(\mathbb{C}^{L}\right)
$$

Like the open chain, we can characterise the ground state space by the new CAR operators

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\mathfrak{d}_{j}=\frac{1}{2}\left(\mathfrak{b}_{2 j}+i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}\right), & \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{ \pm}=\frac{1}{2}\left(\mathfrak{b}_{2 L} \pm i \mathfrak{b}_{1}\right), \\
i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}=2 \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}-1, & \pm i \mathfrak{b}_{2 L} \mathfrak{b}_{1}=2\left(\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{ \pm}\right)^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{ \pm}-1 .
\end{array}
$$

In particular $\operatorname{Ran}\left(\mathfrak{d}_{j}\right)$ is a subspace of the -1 eigenspace of $i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}$ and $\operatorname{Ran}\left(\mathfrak{D}_{\text {bd }}^{ \pm}\right)$is a subspace of the $\mp 1$ eigenspace of $i \mathfrak{b}_{2 L} \mathfrak{b}_{1}$. To ensure that the ground state space is characterised, we just need to make sure these spaces are non-trivial. But indeed

$$
\mathfrak{d}_{j}=\frac{i}{2}\left(-e^{i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{j}+e^{-i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}+e^{i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+e^{-i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*}\right), \quad \mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }}^{ \pm}=\frac{i}{2}\left(-e^{i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{L}+e^{-i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*} \pm e^{i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{1} \pm e^{-i \frac{\theta}{2}} \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*}\right),
$$

and so $\mathfrak{d}_{j}|\Omega\rangle$ and $\mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }}^{ \pm}|\Omega\rangle$ are non-zero. Like the open chain, we again need to account for the parity operator, where the following lemma plays an analogous role to Lemma 3.5.

Lemma 3.7 (i) If $L$ is even, then $\mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }}^{+} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle=0$ and $\mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }}^{-} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle \neq 0$.
(ii) If $L$ is odd, then $\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{-} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle=0$ and $\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{+} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle \neq 0$.

Proof. Let us consider the vectors $\mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }}^{ \pm} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle$. Because $\mathfrak{d}_{j}$ and $\mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }}^{ \pm}$are odd operators, it follows that

$$
\mathcal{P} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{ \pm} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle=(-1)^{L} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{ \pm} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1} \mathcal{P}|\Omega\rangle=(-1)^{L} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{ \pm} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle .
$$

On the other hand, let us recall

$$
\mathcal{P}=\prod_{j=1}^{L}\left(-i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j-1} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j}\right)=\left(i \mathfrak{b}_{2 L} \mathfrak{b}_{1}\right) \prod_{j=1}^{L-1}\left(-i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}\right)= \pm\left(2\left(\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{ \pm}\right)^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}-1\right) \prod_{j=1}^{L-1}\left(1-2 \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}\right) .
$$

Computing the parity,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{P} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{ \pm} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle & = \pm\left(2\left(\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{ \pm}\right)^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}-1\right) \prod_{j=1}^{L-1}\left(1-2 \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}\right) \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{ \pm} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle \\
& = \pm\left(2\left(\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{ \pm}\right)^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}-1\right) \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{dd}}^{ \pm} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle \\
& =\mp \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{ \pm} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle .
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore if $L$ is even, then we have that $\mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }}^{+} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle$ is both even and odd. Thus it must be 0 . Similarly, if $L$ is odd, $\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{-} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle$ is even and odd and so must vanish.

Lemma 3.7 can be used to prove the following special case of Proposition 3.9 below.

Proposition 3.8 If $L$ is even, a ground state of $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}( \pm)$ is given by

$$
\left|\psi_{ \pm}\right\rangle=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
\mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle, & \mathfrak{a}_{L+1}=\mathfrak{a}_{1} \\
\mathfrak{d}_{\mathfrak{b d}}^{-} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle, & \mathfrak{a}_{L+1}=-\mathfrak{a}_{1}
\end{array} .\right.
$$

If $L$ is odd, a ground state of $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{ \pm}$is given by

$$
\left|\psi_{ \pm}\right\rangle= \begin{cases}\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{+} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle, & \mathfrak{a}_{L+1}=\mathfrak{a}_{1} \\ \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle, & \mathfrak{a}_{L+1}=-\mathfrak{a}_{1}\end{cases}
$$

In particular, $\mathcal{P}\left|\psi_{ \pm}\right\rangle=\mp\left|\psi_{ \pm}\right\rangle$.
It is true that for $w>0$ the ground states specified in Proposition 3.8 are unique, see [43] for example. To prove such a statement requires constructing an eigenbasis as in Proposition 3.6.

## Connection to index on canonical transformations

Unlike the case of open boundary conditions, the Kitaev model on the closed chain does not have a double degenerate ground state. However, one can still differentiate between different 'phases' using the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index from Definition 3.1.

First consider the trivial Hamiltonian, namely $w=0$ :

$$
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}( \pm)=\mu \sum_{j=1}^{L}\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}-\frac{1}{2}\right)=\frac{1}{2}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
\mathfrak{a}^{*} & \mathfrak{a}
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\mu & 0 \\
0 & -\mu
\end{array}\right)\binom{\mathfrak{a}}{\mathfrak{a}^{*}} .
$$

Hence the BdG Hamiltonian $H_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}( \pm)$ is already in diagonal form and it does not depend on the sign, so the canonical transformation is $W=\mathbf{1}_{2 L}$ and

$$
j\left(\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}( \pm)\right)=\operatorname{sgn} \operatorname{det}(\mathbf{1})=1, \quad \text { for } w=0
$$

Consider now the (orthogonal) shift operator

$$
\left(V_{ \pm} \mathfrak{b}\right)_{j}=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
\mathfrak{b}_{j+1}, & 1 \leq j \leq 2 L-1,  \tag{33}\\
\pm \mathfrak{b}_{1}, & j=2 L,
\end{array} \quad \operatorname{det}\left(V_{ \pm}\right)=\mp 1\right.
$$

Recall the Kitaev Hamiltonian with periodic or anti-periodic boundary conditions from Equation (32). We compute that

$$
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}( \pm)=i w \sum_{j=1}^{L-1} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1} \pm i w \mathfrak{b}_{2 L} \mathfrak{b}_{1}=\frac{i w}{2} \mathfrak{b}^{t} V_{ \pm}^{*}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & \mathbf{1} \\
-\mathbf{1} & 0
\end{array}\right) V_{ \pm} \mathfrak{b}
$$

Therefore, we see that $V_{ \pm}$diagonalises the skew-symmetric matrix $A_{\Lambda}( \pm)$ in the Kitaev chain with periodic or anti-periodic boundary conditions. Because $\operatorname{det}\left(V_{ \pm}\right)=\mp 1$, we see that the periodic and anti-periodic chains have different phase labels.

$$
\begin{equation*}
j\left(\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}( \pm)\right)=\operatorname{det}\left(V_{ \pm}\right)=\mp 1, \quad \text { for } \mu=0 \tag{34}
\end{equation*}
$$

Furthermore, this $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index can be detected by the parity of the ground state $\left|\psi_{ \pm}\right\rangle$from Proposition 3.8. The matrix $V_{-}$can be connected to the identity via a continuous path. This path can then be used to connect the anti-periodic Kitaev chain to the trivial chain.

### 3.8 Other examples

Here we study some non-translation invariant interactions and ground states. This also prepares the ground for the study of a flux insertion through a chain, which merely consists of a modification of a few matrix elements.

## Double-sided chain

The basic Hamiltonian is the following

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbf{H}_{[-L, L]} & =\sum_{j=-L}^{L-1} w_{j}\left[-\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+\mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}\right)+\left(e^{i \theta} \mathfrak{a}_{j} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+e^{-i \theta} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}\right)\right]+\sum_{j=-L}^{L} \mu_{j}\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}-\frac{1}{2}\right) \\
& =\sum_{j=-L}^{L-1} w_{j} i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}+\sum_{j=-L}^{L} \frac{\mu_{j}}{2} i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j-1} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j}, \quad w_{j}, \mu_{j} \in \mathbb{R} \text { for all } j
\end{aligned}
$$

One can roughly think of $\left\{i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}\right\}_{j=-L}^{L-1}$ as playing the role of a spin site and $\left\{i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j-1} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j}\right\}_{j=-L}^{L}$ specifying an external field. In particular, for $\left|\mu_{j}\right|$ small, the sign of $w_{j}$ determines the 'spin-orientation' of the ground state space at site $j$.
Case: $w_{j}=0$ for all $j$
If there are only the diagonal terms $\mu_{j}\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}-\frac{1}{2}\right)$, the ground state space is determined by the sign of $\mu_{j}$ at each site. If $\mu_{j}>0$, then the vacuum $\left|\Omega_{j}\right\rangle$ at site $j$ will be the ground state of $\mu_{j}\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}-\frac{1}{2}\right)$. If $\mu_{j}<0$, then $\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}\left|\Omega_{j}\right\rangle$ is the ground state with energy $\frac{\mu_{j}}{2}$. One can describe the total ground state as a product of the ground state at each site. To write this down, we assume $\mu_{j} \neq 0$ and introduce $s_{\mu_{j}}=0$ if $\mu_{j}>0$ and $s_{\mu_{j}}=1$ if $\mu_{j}<0$. Then the ground state is

$$
|\psi\rangle=\prod_{j=-L}^{L}\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}\right)^{s_{j}}|\Omega\rangle
$$

If $\mu_{k_{1}}=\cdots=\mu_{k_{m}}=0$ for some $m \geq 1$, then

$$
\left\{\mathfrak{a}_{k_{j}}^{*}|\psi\rangle\right\}_{j=1}^{m}, \quad \text { with }|\psi\rangle=\prod_{\substack{j=-L, j \neq k_{l}}}^{L}\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}\right)^{s_{j}}|\Omega\rangle,
$$

are all ground states and so there is an extra degeneracy.
Case: $\mu_{j}=0$ and $w_{j} \neq 0$ for all $j$
This corresponds to the non-periodic Kitaev (quantum Ising) chain

$$
\mathbf{H}_{[-L, L]}=\sum_{j=-L}^{L-1} w_{j} i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}, \quad\left[\mathbf{H}_{[-L, L]}, \mathfrak{b}_{2 L}\right]=\left[\mathbf{H}_{[-L, L]}, \mathfrak{b}_{-2 L-1}\right]=0
$$

Let us assume for the time being that $w_{j} \neq 0$ for all $j$. Then the ground state space at site $j$ is spanned by the $\pm 1$ eigenspace of the self-adjoint unitary $i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}$ depending on the sign of $w_{j}$. Using
again $s_{w_{j}}$ to be 0 or 1 if $w_{j}$ is positive or negative, one can write down ground states explicitly via the operators $\left\{\mathfrak{d}_{j}\right\}_{j=-L}^{L-1}$,

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\mathfrak{d}_{j}=\frac{1}{2}\left(\mathfrak{b}_{2 j}+(-1)^{s_{w_{j}}} i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}\right), & \left(2 \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}-1\right)=(-1)^{s_{w_{j}}} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}, \\
\left\{\mathfrak{d}_{i}^{*}, \mathfrak{d}_{j}\right\}=\delta_{i, j} \mathbf{1}, & \left\{\mathfrak{d}_{i}, \mathfrak{d}_{j}\right\}=0 .
\end{array}
$$

Indeed, one has

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{H}_{[-L, L]}=\sum_{j=-L}^{L-1}(-1)^{s_{w}} w_{j}\left(2 \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}-1\right), \tag{35}
\end{equation*}
$$

where all coefficients in the sum are now positive. Analogous to the case of the Kitaev chain on the one-sided chain with open boundary conditoins, the vector

$$
|\psi\rangle=\prod_{j=-L}^{L-1} \mathfrak{d}_{j}|\Omega\rangle
$$

is a non-zero ground state with energy $\sum_{j=1}^{L-1}(-1)^{s_{j}+1} w_{j}$. Because $\mathfrak{d}_{j}$ is odd for all $j$, we have that $\mathcal{P}|\psi\rangle=|\psi\rangle$. Now $\mathbf{H}_{[-L, L]}$ commutes with $\mathfrak{b}_{-2 L-1}$ and $\mathfrak{b}_{2 L}$ and this leads to a degeneracy of the ground state space that will be investigated next. Let us consider the boundary operator $\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}=\frac{1}{2}\left(\mathfrak{b}_{2 L}+i \mathfrak{b}_{-2 L-1}\right)$ which satisfies the CAR relations with the other $\mathfrak{d}_{j}$ operators. Either $\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}|\psi\rangle$ or $\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*}|\psi\rangle$ is also a ground state of the Hamiltonian (cf. Lemma 3.5) that is, moreover, odd. To determine which one should be used, let us first note that

$$
\mathcal{P}=\prod_{j=-L}^{L}\left(-i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j-1} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j}\right)=i \mathfrak{b}_{2 L} \mathfrak{b}_{-2 L-1} \prod_{j=-L}^{L-1}\left(-i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}\right)=\left(2 \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}-1\right) \prod_{j=-L}^{L-1}(-1)^{s_{w_{j}}}\left(1-2 \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}\right)
$$

Let $i_{\mathrm{bd}} \in\{0,1\}$ be the occupancy number $\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}$, i.e. $\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{(0)}=\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}, \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{(1)}=\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*}$. Then $\mathcal{P}_{\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}}^{\left(\mathrm{i}_{\mathrm{bd}}\right)}|\psi\rangle=-\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{\left(i_{\mathrm{bd}}\right)}|\psi\rangle$. This will be compared with

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{P} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{\left(i_{\mathrm{bd}}\right)}|\psi\rangle & =\left(2 \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}-1\right) \prod_{j=-L}^{L-1}(-1)^{s_{w_{j}}}\left(1-2 \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}\right) \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{\left(i_{\mathrm{bd}}\right)} \mathfrak{d}_{-L} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle \\
& =\left(2 \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}-1\right) \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{\left(i_{\mathrm{bd}}\right)} \prod_{j=-L}^{L-1}(-1)^{s_{w_{j}}}\left(1-2 \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}\right) \mathfrak{d}_{-L} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle \\
& =(-1)^{1+i_{\mathrm{bd}}} \mathfrak{o}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{\left(i_{\mathrm{bd}}\right)}\left(\prod_{j=1}^{L-1}(-1)^{s_{w_{j}}}\right) \mathfrak{d}_{-L} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle \\
& =(-1)^{1+i_{\mathrm{bd}}}(-1)^{\sum_{j=1}^{L-1} s_{w_{j}}} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{\left(i_{\mathrm{bd}}\right)}|\psi\rangle .
\end{aligned}
$$

Suppose that there are $M$ sites with $w_{j}<0$. If $M$ is odd, then $\mathfrak{D}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*}|\psi\rangle$ is a ground state and $\mathfrak{D}_{\mathrm{bd}}|\psi\rangle=0$. If $M$ is even, then $\mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }}|\psi\rangle$ is a ground state and $\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*}|\psi\rangle=0$. We then see that if we change the orientation of a single spin site, $w_{j_{0}} \mapsto-w_{j_{0}}$, then the ground state space changes.

Case: $\mu_{j}=0, w_{j_{1}}=\cdots=w_{j_{k}}=0$ for $k<2 L$
We now consider the more degenerate case, where some of the spin coefficients $\left\{w_{j_{i}}\right\}_{i=1}^{k}$ are zero with
$k<2 L$. Let $Z=\left\{j_{1}, \ldots, j_{k}\right\} \subset[-L, L] \cap \mathbb{Z}$ be the set of labels for the 0 -coefficient spin-sites. Then the Hamiltonian can be written

$$
\mathbf{H}_{[-L, L]}=\sum_{\substack{j \in[-L, L] \cap \mathbb{Z} \\ j \neq Z}} w_{j} i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}
$$

The techniques of the previous section still apply. In particular, we still have that

$$
\mathbf{H}_{[-L, L]}=\sum_{\substack{j \in[-L, L] \cap \mathbb{Z}, j \notin Z}}(-1)^{s_{w_{j}}} w_{j}\left(2 \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}-1\right), \quad \quad \mathfrak{d}_{j}=\frac{1}{2}\left(\mathfrak{b}_{2 j}+(-1)^{s_{w_{j}}} i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}\right)
$$

and the vector

$$
|\psi\rangle=\prod_{\substack{j \in[-L, L] \cap \mathbb{Z}, j \notin Z}} \mathfrak{d}_{j}|\Omega\rangle
$$

is a ground state. We now consider the extra degeneracy, where the commuting family of self-adjoint unitaries $\left\{i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}\right\}_{j \in Z}$ commute with the Hamiltonian and also the ground state projection. Therefore, the vectors $\left\{\frac{1}{2}\left(\mathfrak{b}_{2 j}+i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}\right)|\psi\rangle\right\}_{j \in Z}$ are also a family of linearly independent ground states. As previously, either $\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}|\psi\rangle$ or $\mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }}^{*}|\psi\rangle$ is another ground state. Therefore in total we have a $(k+2)$-fold degeneracy with $k=|Z|$.

## Closed chain

The Hamiltonian of study will again be the (non-trivial) Kitaev chain but without translation invariance of interactions,

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathbf{H}_{L}= & \sum_{j=1}^{L-1} w_{j}\left[-\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+\mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}\right)+\left(e^{i \theta} \mathfrak{a}_{j} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+e^{-i \theta} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}\right)\right] \\
& \quad+w_{L}\left[-\left(\mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{1}+\mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{L}\right)+\left(e^{i \theta} \mathfrak{a}_{L} \mathfrak{a}_{1}+e^{-i \theta} \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}\right)\right] \\
= & \sum_{j=1}^{L-1} w_{j} i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}+w_{L} i \mathfrak{b}_{2 L} \mathfrak{b}_{1} . \tag{36}
\end{align*}
$$

We again let $s_{w_{j}}$ be such that $(-1)^{s_{w_{j}}} w_{j}$ is non-negative. As previously, the ground state is given by the $(-1)^{s_{w_{j}}+1}$ eigenspaces of the commuting self-adjoint unitaries $\left\{i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}\right\}_{j=1}^{L-1}$ and $i \mathfrak{b}_{2 L} \mathfrak{b}_{1}$. We again characterise the ground state space by the operators $\left\{\mathfrak{d}_{j}\right\}_{j=1}^{L-1}$ and $\mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }}$, where

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\mathfrak{d}_{j}=\frac{1}{2}\left(\mathfrak{b}_{2 j}+(-1)^{s_{w_{j}}} i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}\right), & \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}=\frac{1}{2}\left(\mathfrak{b}_{2 L}+(-1)^{\left.s_{w_{L}} i \mathfrak{b}_{1}\right)}\right. \\
\left(2 \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}-1\right)=(-1)^{s_{w_{j}}} i^{2} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}, & \left(2 \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}-1\right)=(-1)^{s_{w_{L}}} i \mathfrak{b}_{2 L} \mathfrak{b}_{1}
\end{array}
$$

and

$$
\mathbf{H}_{L}=\sum_{j=-L}^{L-1}(-1)^{s_{w_{j}}} w_{j}\left(2 \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}-\mathbf{1}\right)+(-1)^{s_{w_{L}}} w_{L}\left(2 \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}-\mathbf{1}\right)
$$

with each coefficient $\left\{(-1)^{s_{w_{j}}} w_{j}\right\}_{j=1}^{L}$ strictly positive.

Proposition 3.9 Let $s_{P}=\sum_{j=1}^{L} s_{w_{j}}$ be the number of spin sites with negative orientation.
(i) If $L$ and $s_{P}$ have the same parity, then $\mathfrak{d}_{0} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle$ is a ground state of $\mathbf{H}_{L}$.
(ii) If $L$ and $s_{P}$ have different parity, then $\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle$ is a ground state of $\mathbf{H}_{L}$.

Proof. Again let $i_{\mathrm{bd}} \in\{0,1\}$ be the occupancy number, that is, $\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{(0)}=\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}$ and $\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{(1)}=\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*}$. We note that $\mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }}^{\left(i_{\mathrm{bd}}\right)} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle$ has parity $(-1)^{L}$. We also use that

$$
\mathcal{P}=i \mathfrak{b}_{2 L} \mathfrak{b}_{1} \prod_{j=1}^{L-1}\left(-i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}\right)=(-1)^{s_{w_{L}}}\left(2 \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}-1\right) \prod_{j=1}^{L-1}(-1)^{s_{w_{j}}}\left(1-2 \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}\right)
$$

so

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{P} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{\left(i_{\mathrm{bd}}\right)} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle & =(-1)^{s_{w_{L}}}\left(2 \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}-1\right) \prod_{j=1}^{L-1}(-1)^{s_{w_{j}}}\left(1-2 \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}\right) \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{\left(i_{\mathrm{bd}}\right)} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle \\
& =\left((-1)^{s_{w_{L}}+i_{\mathrm{bd}}+1} \prod_{j=1}^{L-1}(-1)^{s_{w_{j}}}\right) \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{\left(i_{\mathrm{bd}}\right)} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle \\
& =(-1)^{i_{\mathrm{bd}}+1+s_{P}} \mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{\left(i_{\mathrm{bd}}\right)} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle
\end{aligned}
$$

Now, if $L$ and $s_{P}$ are even, then $\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle$ will have even and odd parity and so will vanish. Hence $\mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle$ minimises the term $(-1)^{s_{w}} 2 w_{L} \mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }}$ and gives a ground state. If $L$ is even and $s_{P}$ odd, then $\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle$ has consistent parity (the term with $\mathfrak{d}_{\mathrm{bd}}^{*}$ does not) and so will minimise $\mathbf{H}_{L}$. If $L$ is odd and $s_{P}$ even, then $\mathfrak{o}_{\text {bd }} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle$ is again non-zero and hence is a ground state. If $L$ and $s_{P}$ are odd, then $\mathfrak{d}_{\text {bd }} \mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle$ will have odd and even parity and so must be zero. Hence $\mathfrak{d}_{1} \cdots \mathfrak{d}_{L-1}|\Omega\rangle$ is a ground state.

### 3.9 Ground state gap

The Hamiltonians that we have considered so far are given by sums of commuting projections. For such models, it is relatively straight-forward to show that the Hamiltonian has a uniformly bounded ground state energy gap. For more general situations, a common technique to show a uniformly bounded ground state energy gap is to employ the Martingale method [53, Section 5]. In order to introduce the method, in this section we will show how it can be applied to the simple models we have considered thus far.

## Double-sided chain

Let us consider the case of the spin chain with nearest-neighbour interactions. For convenience, we would like the ground state energy to be 0 , so take the Hamiltonian

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{H}_{[-L, L]}=\sum_{j=-L}^{L-1} i w_{j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}-E_{G} \mathbf{1}, \quad E_{G}=\sum_{j=-L}^{L-1}(-1)^{s_{w_{j}}+1} w_{j}, \quad w_{j} \neq 0 \tag{37}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let us first define a sequence of Hamiltonians $\left\{\mathbf{H}_{n}\right\}_{n=0}^{L} \subset\left(A_{[-L, L] \cap \mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}$ where $\mathbf{H}_{0}=0$ and

$$
\mathbf{H}_{n}=\sum_{j=-n}^{n-1} w_{j}\left(i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}+(-1)^{s_{w_{j}}} \mathbf{1}\right)
$$

Thus we have a non-decreasing sequence of non-negative Hamiltonians such that the kernels $\mathcal{G}_{n}=$ $\operatorname{Ker}\left(\mathbf{H}_{n}\right)$ form a non-increasing sequence of subspaces

$$
\mathcal{F}\left(\mathbb{C}^{2 L+1}\right)=\mathcal{G}_{0} \supset \mathcal{G}_{1} \supset \cdots \supset \mathcal{G}_{L}=\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{GS}}
$$

Now let $h_{n}=\mathbf{H}_{n}-\mathbf{H}_{n-1}$ and let $g_{n}$ be the kernel projection of $h_{n}$. In this case, using Equation (35),

$$
h_{n}=2(-1)^{s_{w_{-n}}} w_{-n} \mathfrak{d}_{-n}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{-n}+2(-1)^{s_{w_{n-1}}} w_{n-1} \mathfrak{d}_{n-1}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{n-1}
$$

Hence $\mathfrak{d}_{-n} \mathfrak{d}_{n-1} \cdot \mathcal{F}\left(\mathbb{C}^{2 L+1}\right)$ is the ground state space of $h_{n}$. Alternatively, the kernel is determined by the $(-1)^{s_{w_{-n}}+1}$ and $(-1)^{s_{w_{n-1}}+1}$-eigenspaces of $i \mathfrak{b}_{-2 n} \mathfrak{b}_{-2 n+1}$ and $i \mathfrak{b}_{2 n-2} \mathfrak{b}_{2 n-1}$. Hence

$$
\begin{aligned}
h_{n} & =(-1)^{s_{w_{-n}}} w_{-n}\left(1+(-1)^{s_{w_{-n}}} i \mathfrak{b}_{-2 n} \mathfrak{b}_{-2 n+1}\right)+(-1)^{s_{w_{n-1}}} w_{n-1}\left(1+(-1)^{s_{w_{n-1}}} i \mathfrak{b}_{2 n-2} \mathfrak{b}_{2 n-1}\right) \\
& =(-1)^{s_{w_{-n}}} \frac{w_{-n}}{2} P_{(-1)^{s_{w_{-n}}}}+(-1)^{s_{w_{n-1}}} \frac{w_{n-1}}{2} P_{(-1)^{s_{w_{n-1}}}} \\
& \geq \gamma_{n}\left(\mathbf{1}-g_{n}\right), \quad \quad \gamma_{n}=\min \left\{\frac{\left|w_{-n}\right|}{2}, \frac{\left|w_{n-1}\right|}{2}\right\},
\end{aligned}
$$

where $P_{ \pm 1}$ is the projection onto the $\pm 1$ eigenspace. If we take $\gamma=\min _{j}\left\{\frac{\left|w_{-j}\right|}{2}\right\}>0$, then for any $0 \leq n \leq L, h_{n} \geq \gamma\left(\mathbf{1}-g_{n}\right)$. Next let us introduce the projections

$$
E_{n}=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
\mathbf{1}-P_{\operatorname{Ker}\left(\mathbf{H}_{1}\right)}, & n=0 \\
P_{\operatorname{Ker}\left(\mathbf{H}_{n}\right)}-P_{\operatorname{Ker}\left(\mathbf{H}_{n+1}\right)}, & 1 \leq n \leq L-1 \\
P_{\operatorname{Ker}\left(\mathbf{H}_{L}\right)}, & n=L
\end{array}, \quad E_{n} E_{m}=\delta_{n, m} E_{n}, \quad \sum_{n=1}^{L} E_{n}=\mathbf{1}\right.
$$

In this case, one has explicitly

$$
E_{n}= \begin{cases}\mathbf{1}-\frac{1}{2}\left(1-(-1)^{s_{w_{-1}}} i \mathfrak{b}_{-2} \mathfrak{b}_{-1}\right), & n=0 \\ \mathbf{1}-\frac{1}{2}\left(1-(-1)^{s_{w_{-n-1}}} i \mathfrak{b}_{-2 n-2} \mathfrak{b}_{-2 n-1}\right) \frac{1}{2}\left(1-(-1)^{s_{w_{n}}} i \mathfrak{b}_{2 n} \mathfrak{b}_{2 n+1}\right), & 1 \leq n \leq L-1 \\ \prod_{j=-L}^{L-1} \frac{1}{2}\left(1-(-1)^{s_{w_{j}}} i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}\right), & n=L\end{cases}
$$

Similarly, we have that $g_{n+1}=P_{\operatorname{Ker}\left(h_{n+1}\right)}$ can be written as

$$
g_{n+1}=\frac{1}{2}\left(1-(-1)^{s_{w_{-n-1}}} i \mathfrak{b}_{-2 n-2} \mathfrak{b}_{-2 n-1}\right) \frac{1}{2}\left(1-(-1)^{s_{w_{n}}} i \mathfrak{b}_{2 n} \mathfrak{b}_{2 n+1}\right)
$$

One can then check that $\left[E_{n}, g_{n+1}\right]=0$ and $E_{n} g_{n+1} E_{n}=0$ for $0 \leq n \leq L-1$. We therefore satisfy the hypothesis of [53, Theorem 5.1], which implies the following result.

Proposition 3.10 The Hamiltonian from Equation (37) with $\min _{-L \leq j \leq L}\left\{\frac{\left|w_{-j}\right|}{2}\right\}>0$ uniformly in $L$ has a spectral gap above the ground state energy that is uniform in the size of the chain $[-L, L] \cap \mathbb{Z}$.

Recalling Proposition 2.2, Proposition 3.10 guarantees that the infinite volume GNS Hamiltonian $h_{\omega}$ coming from the weak-* limit of the finite-volume ground states will have a spectral gap above 0.

Case: $\mu_{j}=0$ and $w_{j}=0$ for $j \in Z$, a fixed finite set
Next we consider the case of extra degeneracy in the finite chains. To this end we fix a set of sites with $w_{j}=0$ that will not change as $L$ increases. That is, we start with a sufficiently large $L$. Given
such a set $Z$, we enumerate the set $[-L, L] \cap \mathbb{Z} \backslash Z$ by $\left\{j_{1}, \ldots, j_{N}\right\}$ with $j_{i}<j_{i+1}$. This allows to define the sequence

$$
0=\mathbf{H}_{0} \leq \mathbf{H}_{1} \leq \cdots \leq \mathbf{H}_{N}=\mathbf{H}_{[-L, L]},
$$

where

$$
\mathbf{H}_{n}=\sum_{j=j_{1}}^{j_{n}} w_{j}\left(i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}+(-1)^{s_{w_{j}}} \mathbf{1}\right) .
$$

Again suppose that there is a strictly positive $0<\gamma$ with $\gamma<\min \left\{\frac{\left|w_{j}\right|}{2}: w_{j} \neq 0\right\}$. As in the non-degenerate case, we define $h_{n}=\mathbf{H}_{n}-\mathbf{H}_{n-1}, g_{n}=P_{\operatorname{Ker}\left(h_{n}\right)}$ and

$$
E_{n}=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
\mathbf{1}-P_{\operatorname{Ker}\left(\mathbf{H}_{1}\right)}, & n=0, \\
P_{\operatorname{Ker}\left(\mathbf{H}_{n}\right)}-P_{\operatorname{Ker}\left(\mathbf{H}_{n+1}\right)}, & 1 \leq n \leq N-1, \\
P_{\operatorname{Ker}\left(\mathbf{H}_{L}\right)}, & n=N,
\end{array} \quad E_{n} E_{m}=\delta_{n, m} E_{n}, \quad \sum_{n=1}^{N} E_{n}=\mathbf{1}\right.
$$

Note that in the degenerate picture, $P_{\operatorname{Ker}\left(\mathbf{H}_{1}\right)}$ is a larger projection than in the case $w_{j} \neq 0$ for all $j$. However, one can still follow the previous method of argument without issue, where we have that $h_{n} \geq \gamma\left(\mathbf{1}-P_{\operatorname{Ker}\left(h_{n}\right)}\right),\left[E_{n}, g_{n+1}\right]=0$ and $E_{n} g_{n+1} E_{n}=0$ for $0 \leq n \leq N-1$. Therefore the Martingale method applies again, which will ensure that in the thermodynamic limit $L \rightarrow \infty$ (which implies $N \rightarrow \infty$ ), the infinite volume ground state is gapped.

The system with $w_{j}=0$ for a fixed finite set is the same as the system with $w_{j} \neq 0$ up to a finiterank operator. Hence the GNS representations of the infinite volume ground states will be unitarily equivalent (cf. [18, Example 6.2.56]).

## Closed chain

Finally we study the ground state gap of the Hamiltonian

$$
\mathbf{H}_{L}=\sum_{j=1}^{L-1} w_{j}\left(i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}+(-1)^{s_{w_{j}}} \mathbf{1}\right)+w_{L}\left(i \mathfrak{b}_{2 L} \mathfrak{b}_{1}+(-1)^{s_{w_{L}}} \mathbf{1}\right), \quad s_{w_{j}}= \begin{cases}0, & w_{j} \geq 0 \\ 1, & w_{j}<0\end{cases}
$$

where again $0<\gamma \leq \frac{1}{2}\left|w_{j}\right|$ for all $j$. Because the details of the proof are very similar to the case of the open chain, some details will be skipped.

We define the sequence of non-negative Hamiltonians $\left\{\mathbf{H}_{n}\right\}_{n=0}^{L}$ with $\mathbf{H}_{0}=0, \mathbf{H}_{L}$, as before and

$$
\mathbf{H}_{n}=\sum_{j=1}^{n} w_{j}\left(i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}+(-1)^{s_{w}} \mathbf{1}\right), \quad 1 \leq n \leq L-1 .
$$

The operators of interest for the Martingale method are $h_{n}=\mathbf{H}_{n}-\mathbf{H}_{n-1}, g_{n}=P_{\operatorname{Ker}\left(h_{n}\right)}$, where in this case

$$
h_{n}=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
w_{1}\left(i \mathfrak{b}_{2} \mathfrak{b}_{3}+(-1)^{s_{w_{1}}} \mathbf{1}\right), & n=1, \\
w_{1}\left(i \mathfrak{b}_{2 n} \mathfrak{b}_{2 n+1}+(-1)^{s_{w}} \mathbf{1}\right), & 2 \leq n \leq L-1, \\
w_{L}\left(i \mathfrak{b}_{2 L} \mathfrak{b}_{1}+(-1)^{s_{w_{L}}} \mathbf{1}\right), & n=L,
\end{array} \quad g_{n}=\frac{1}{2}\left(\mathbf{1}-(-1)^{s_{w_{n}}} i \mathfrak{b}_{2 n} \mathfrak{b}_{2 n+1}\right) .\right.
$$

By the Spectral Theorem,

$$
h_{n}=\frac{w_{n}}{2}\left(1+(-1)^{s_{w_{n}}} i \mathfrak{b}_{2 n} \mathfrak{b}_{2 n+1}\right)=\frac{w_{n}}{2}\left(1-P_{\operatorname{Ker}\left(h_{n}\right)}\right) \geq \gamma\left(1-g_{n}\right)
$$

for $0<\gamma \leq \min _{j} \frac{\left|w_{j}\right|}{2}$. We also have the family of projections

$$
E_{n}= \begin{cases}\mathbf{1}-P_{\operatorname{Ker}\left(\mathbf{H}_{1}\right)}, & n=0, \\ P_{\mathrm{Ker}\left(\mathbf{H}_{n}\right)}-P_{\operatorname{Ker}\left(\mathbf{H}_{n+1}\right)}, & 1 \leq n \leq L-1, \quad E_{n} E_{m}=\delta_{n, m} E_{n}, \quad \sum_{n=1}^{L} E_{n}=\mathbf{1} . \\ P_{\operatorname{Ker}\left(\mathbf{H}_{L}\right)}, & n=L\end{cases}
$$

Again

$$
E_{n}= \begin{cases}\mathbf{1}-\frac{1}{2}\left(\mathbf{1}-(-1)^{s_{w}} i \mathfrak{b}_{2} \mathfrak{b}_{3}\right), & n=0 \\ \left.P_{\operatorname{Ker}\left(\mathbf{H}_{n}\right)} \mathbf{1}-g_{n+1}\right), & 1 \leq n \leq L-1 \\ \left(\prod_{j=1}^{L-1}\left(\mathbf{1}-(-1)^{s_{w}} i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}\right)\right)\left(\mathbf{1}-(-1)^{s_{w_{j}}} i^{\mathfrak{b}_{2 L}} \mathfrak{b}_{1}\right), & n=L\end{cases}
$$

and it is straight-forward to check that $\left[E_{n}, g_{n+1}\right]=0$ and $E_{n} g_{n+1} E_{n}=0$ for $0 \leq n \leq L-1$. Thus the hypotheses of the Martingale method are satisfied and one has the following.

Proposition 3.11 The Hamiltonian in Equation (36) has a spectral gap above the ground state energy that is uniform in the length $L$ of the chain.

### 3.10 Flux insertion and $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow

Recall from (13) on page 12 that the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index for quadratic chains can be interpreted as a (finitedimensional) $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow between skew-symmetric matrix $A_{\Lambda}$ (or equivalently $i H_{\Lambda}$ ) and its diagonalisation. Here we further investigate such applications of the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow by considering a flux insertion in closed fermionic chains.

Let us first note that we can immediately use the concatenation properties of the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow to establish a path between the Kitaev (or quantum Ising) model with periodic and anti-periodic chains. Namely, for $V_{ \pm}$as in Equation (33),

$$
\mathrm{Sf}_{2}\left(V_{+} A_{\Lambda} V_{+}^{*}, V_{-} A_{\Lambda} V_{-}^{*}\right)=\mathrm{Sf}_{2}\left(V_{+} A_{\Lambda} V_{+}^{*}, A_{\Lambda}\right) \mathrm{Sf}_{2}\left(A_{\Lambda}, V_{-} A_{\Lambda} V_{-}\right)=\operatorname{det}\left(V_{+}\right) \operatorname{det}\left(V_{-}\right)=-1
$$

and so the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow is non-trivial. This result is also immediate from Proposition 3.3, though we would like to show this in a more physically meaningful way.

We insert a flux term into the closed chain that plays the role of switching the boundary conditions from periodic to anti-periodic. Such a system was previously studied in [43]. The Hamiltonian is

$$
\begin{gathered}
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{K i t}(\alpha)=\sum_{j=1}^{L-1}\left(-w\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+\mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}\right)+\Delta \mathfrak{a}_{j} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+\bar{\Delta} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}\right)+\mu \sum_{j=1}^{L}\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}-\frac{1}{2}\right) \\
+\left(-w\left(e^{-i \alpha} \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{1}+e^{i \alpha} \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{L}\right)+\Delta e^{i \alpha} \mathfrak{a}_{L} \mathfrak{a}_{1}+\bar{\Delta} e^{-i \alpha} \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}\right)
\end{gathered}
$$

One clearly has that $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(0)=\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(+)$ and $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(\pi)=\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(-)$. In the case $w=\Delta=0$, the Hamiltonian is constant throughout the deformation of $\alpha$ and, hence, will have no $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow. In the case $\Delta=e^{i \theta} w$ and $\mu=0$, however, one can again re-write the Hamiltonian in the Majorana representation as

$$
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(\alpha)=i w \sum_{j=1}^{L-1} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}+i w \cos (\alpha) \mathfrak{b}_{2 L} \mathfrak{b}_{1}-i w \sin (\alpha) \mathfrak{b}_{2 L} \mathfrak{b}_{2},
$$

where the following identity was used:

$$
\mathfrak{b}_{2 L} \mathfrak{b}_{2}=\mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{1}-\mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{L}-e^{i \theta} \mathfrak{a}_{L} \mathfrak{a}_{1}+e^{-i \theta} \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}
$$

The following result also follows from (34) combined with Proposition 3.3, but we provide a separate proof.

Proposition 3.12 The $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow defined by the path $\alpha \in[0, \pi] \mapsto \mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(\alpha)$ is non-trivial in the case $\Delta=e^{i \theta} w$ and $\mu=0$.

Proof. Recalling that the Majorana operators are ordered in column vector $\mathfrak{b}=\binom{\mathfrak{b}_{\text {od }}}{\mathfrak{b}_{\text {ev }}}$, the skew-adjoint matrix from $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(\alpha)$ is given by

$$
A_{\Lambda}(\alpha)=\frac{w}{2}\left(\begin{array}{cccccc} 
& & & & & \\
& & & -1 & & -\cos (\alpha) \\
& 1 & & & -\mathbf{1}_{L-2} & \\
& & \mathbf{1}_{L-2} & & & \sin (\alpha) \\
\cos (\alpha) & & & -\sin (\alpha) & &
\end{array}\right)
$$

In particular, one can connect $A_{\Lambda}(\pi)=V A_{\Lambda}(0) V^{*}$, where

$$
V=\left(\begin{array}{cccc} 
& & & 1 \\
& & U & \\
& -U & & \\
1 & & &
\end{array}\right), \quad U=\left(\begin{array}{lll} 
& & \\
& . & \\
1 & &
\end{array}\right) \in \mathcal{O}_{L-1}
$$

Then

$$
\operatorname{Sf}_{2}\left(\alpha \in[0, \pi] \mapsto A_{\Lambda}(\alpha)\right)=\operatorname{sgn} \operatorname{det}(V)=-1
$$

as required.
As the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow is non-trivial, one expects a double degenerate level crossing at the midpoint of the path. Indeed, the Hamiltonian is

$$
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}\left(\frac{\pi}{2}\right)=i w \sum_{j=1}^{L-1} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}-i w \mathfrak{b}_{2 L} \mathfrak{b}_{2}=i w \sum_{j=2}^{L-1} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}+i w \mathfrak{b}_{2}\left(\mathfrak{b}_{3}+\mathfrak{b}_{2 L}\right)
$$

One can then check that $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}\left(\frac{\pi}{2}\right)$ commutes with the anti-commuting self-adjoint unitaries $\mathfrak{b}_{1}$ and $\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\left(\mathfrak{b}_{3}-\mathfrak{b}_{2 L}\right)$. Hence if $|\psi\rangle$ is a ground state of $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{Kit}}\left(\frac{\pi}{2}\right)$, then so is $\mathfrak{b}_{1}|\psi\rangle$ and $\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\left(\mathfrak{b}_{3}-\mathfrak{b}_{2 L}\right)|\psi\rangle$.

By Proposition 3.11, $\mathbf{H}_{L}(0)$ and $\mathbf{H}_{L}(\pi)$ are known to have a uniformly bounded ground state gap. Therefore, the ground state energy gap of $\mathbf{H}_{L}(\alpha)$ goes to 0 as $\alpha \rightarrow \frac{\pi}{2}$.

Remark 3.13 We can readily extend Proposition 3.12 to say that a flux insertion that changes the orientation of any single spin site $i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}$ will give a non-trivial $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-spectral flow. Thus, while there are many examples of Hamiltonians on the closed chain with a uniformly bounded ground state gap (Proposition 3.11), this gap can be closed by a local perturbation. One reason for this behaviour is that a fermionic Hamiltonian on a closed chain becomes highly non-local under the Jordan-Wigner transformation, which is often utilized in proofs of the stability of the ground state energy gap.

## Flux insertion in two cells

Here we briefly show that adding a magnetic flux through two unit cells does not substantially change the system. The Hamiltonian is

$$
\begin{aligned}
\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{L}(\alpha)= & w \sum_{j=2}^{L-1}\left[-\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+\mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}\right)+\mathfrak{a}_{j} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+\mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}\right] \\
& +w\left[-\left(e^{i \alpha} \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{1}+e^{-i \alpha} \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{L}\right)+e^{i \alpha} \mathfrak{a}_{L} \mathfrak{a}_{1}+e^{-i \alpha} \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}\right] \\
& +w\left[-\left(e^{-i \alpha} \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{2}+e^{i \alpha} \mathfrak{a}_{2}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{1}\right)+e^{i \alpha} \mathfrak{a}_{1} \mathfrak{a}_{2}+e^{-i \alpha} \mathfrak{a}_{2}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*}\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

where for simplicity we have set the phase factor $\theta=0$. In the Majorana representation

$$
\begin{aligned}
\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{L}(\alpha) & =w \sum_{j=2}^{L-1} i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}+w\left(\cos (\alpha) i \mathfrak{b}_{L} \mathfrak{b}_{1}-\sin (\alpha) i \mathfrak{b}_{L} \mathfrak{b}_{2}\right)+w\left(\cos (\alpha) i \mathfrak{b}_{2} \mathfrak{b}_{3}+\sin (\alpha) i \mathfrak{b}_{1} \mathfrak{b}_{3}\right) \\
& =w \sum_{j=2}^{L-1} i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}+i w \mathfrak{b}_{1}\left(\sin (\alpha) \mathfrak{b}_{3}-\cos (\alpha) \mathfrak{b}_{L}\right)+i w \mathfrak{b}_{2}\left(\cos (\alpha) \mathfrak{b}_{3}+\sin (\alpha) \mathfrak{b}_{L}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

A careful check shows that for any $\alpha$ the operators $i \mathfrak{b}_{1}\left(\sin (\alpha) \mathfrak{b}_{3}-\cos (\alpha) \mathfrak{b}_{L}\right)$ and $i \mathfrak{b}_{2}\left(\cos (\alpha) \mathfrak{b}_{3}+\right.$ $\left.\sin (\alpha) \mathfrak{b}_{L}\right)$ are commuting self-adjoint unitaries that also commute with the other terms $i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j} \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}$ in the Hamiltonian. Hence the ground state space can be explicitly characterised by the -1 eigenstate of each self-adjoint unitary in the sum.

We can again define the CAR operators

$$
\mathfrak{d}_{j}= \begin{cases}\frac{1}{2}\left(\mathfrak{b}_{1}+i\left(\sin (\alpha) \mathfrak{b}_{3}-\cos (\alpha) \mathfrak{b}_{L}\right)\right), & j=1 \\ \frac{1}{2}\left(\mathfrak{b}_{2 j}+i \mathfrak{b}_{2 j+1}\right), & 2 \leq j \leq L-1 \\ \frac{1}{2}\left(\mathfrak{b}_{2}+i\left(\cos (\alpha) \mathfrak{b}_{3}+\sin (\alpha) \mathfrak{b}_{L}\right)\right), & j=L\end{cases}
$$

Then the Hamiltonian can once again be written as

$$
\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{L}(\alpha)=w \sum_{j=1}^{L}\left(2 \mathfrak{d}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{d}_{j}-1\right)
$$

and so any ground state must look like $\prod_{j} \mathfrak{o}_{j}|\psi\rangle$.
While the specific characterisation of the ground state space depends $\alpha$, the key spectral properties of $\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{L}(\alpha)$ do not. In particular, the Martingale method used to show the ground state gap of $\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{L}(0)$ and $\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{L}(\pi)$ in Proposition 3.11 also remains valid along the deformation.

In this case, we have that $j\left(\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{L}(0)\right)=j\left(\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{L}(\pi)\right)=-1$ and the ground state gap remains uniformly bounded along the path $\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{L}(\alpha)$ connecting the two Hamiltonians. As is perhaps to be expected of a $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-invariant, changing the orientation of a single spin site will cause a $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase change. But simultaneously changing the orientation of two spin sites can be done without closing the ground state gap. This also follows by inserting the two fluxes consecutively and applying the concatenation property of the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow.

## 4 Higher order interactions on finite chains

### 4.1 Gapped ground states in finite volume systems

Let us now turn or attention to even interactions on finite chains that need not be quadratic. We say that two finite-volume Hamiltonians $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(0)$ and $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(1)$ are in the same gapped phase if there is a $C^{1}$-path of finite volume Hamiltonians $s \in[0,1] \mapsto\left\{\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(s)\right\}_{\Lambda}$ connecting $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(0)$ and $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(1)$ and with the property that there is a spectral gap above the ground state energy of $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(s)$ for all $s$ that is uniform in $|\Lambda|$.

In this section, we consider Hamiltonians with higher-order interactions and paths between gapped Hamiltonians where the ground state gap may close, indicating that such Hamiltonians have distinct topological phase labels. As in the case of quadratic interactions, one way we will induce such gap closings is via a local flux insertion.

## Parity and gap closing

We note a result that is mathematically simple but has important physical consequences.
Lemma 4.1 Let $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(0)$ and $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(1)$ be parity-symmetric Hamiltonians on the fermionic Fock space $\mathcal{F}_{\Lambda}$ with $\Lambda$ finite. Suppose $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(0)$ and $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(1)$ have unique ground states with opposite parity. Then the ground state gap will close along any continuous path $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(s)$ connecting $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(0)$ and $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(1)$ with the property that $\mathcal{P} \mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(s) \mathcal{P}=\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(s)$ for all $s \in[0,1]$.

Proof. Provided that we include multiplicity, we can take a continuous enumeration of the eigenvalues $\left\{\lambda_{j}(s)\right\}$ of $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(s)$, where each $\lambda_{j}:[0,1] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ is continuous [41, Chapter $\left.2, \S 5\right]$. Because the ground state eigenvalues of the Hamiltonians at the end points of the path have opposite parity and we restrict to parity-symmetric paths, $\mathcal{P} \mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(s) \mathcal{P}=\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(s)$, there must be at least one $s_{0} \in(0,1)$ such that the lowest energy eigenvalue projection at $s_{0}$ is discontinuous. Such a discontinuity must come from a double degeneracy or crossing of eigenvalues.

We remark that while the previous statement is mathematically trivial, it can be applied to finite volume Hamiltonians with arbitrarily large interaction terms. The much more non-trivial question for finite volume systems is to find a physically interesting pair of Hamiltonians with unique ground states with opposite parity. A large and important class of such Hamiltonians can be constructed using fermionic matrix product states of even and odd parity [20]. Another more involved question is to what extent an index derived from the parity of ground state eigenvectors still makes sense in the infinite volume limit.

### 4.2 The interacting Kitaev chain

Here we summarise the key results of [42]. Starting from the Kitaev Hamiltonian $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\text {Kit }}$ from Equation (15), one adds a quartic interaction term with damping parameter $K \geq 0$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\text {int }}= & \sum_{j=1}^{L-1}\left[-w\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+\mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}\right)+\Delta \mathfrak{a}_{j} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+\bar{\Delta} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}\right] \\
& -\frac{1}{2} \sum_{j=1}^{L} \mu_{j}\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}-1\right)+K \sum_{j=1}^{L-1}\left(2 \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}-1\right)\left(2 \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}-1\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

We note that the term $\frac{1}{2} \sum_{j} \mu_{j}\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}-1\right)$ is now negative. We do this to better align our results with [42] as the map $\mu_{j} \rightarrow-\mu_{j}$ does change the spectrum of the Hamiltonian (though the ground state in the trivial case $K=w=\Delta=0$ is now spanned by the occupied state rather than the vacuum).

We can again consider the spin-chain analogue of the interacting chain. Recalling the JordanWigner transformation,

$$
\begin{gathered}
\sigma_{j}^{x}=\left(e^{-i \pi \sum_{k=1}^{j-1} \mathfrak{a}_{k}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{k}}\right) \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}, \quad \sigma_{j}^{y}=\left(e^{i \pi \sum_{k=1}^{j-1} \mathfrak{a}_{k}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{k}}\right) \mathfrak{a}_{j}, \quad \sigma_{j}^{z}=2 \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}-\mathbf{1}, \\
\mathfrak{b}_{2 j-1}=\left(\prod_{k=1}^{j-1} \sigma_{k}^{z}\right) \sigma_{j}^{x}, \quad \mathfrak{b}_{2 j}=\left(\prod_{k=1}^{j-1} \sigma_{k}^{z}\right) \sigma_{j}^{y},
\end{gathered}
$$

the interacting chain maps to the XYZ chain in a magnetic field

$$
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{spin}}=\sum_{j=1}^{L-1}\left(-J_{x} \sigma_{j}^{x} \sigma_{j+1}^{x}-J_{y} \sigma_{j}^{y} \sigma_{j+1}^{y}+J_{z} \sigma_{j}^{z} \sigma_{j+1}^{z}\right)-\frac{1}{2} \sum_{j=1}^{L} \mu_{j} \sigma_{j}^{z},
$$

with $J_{x}=(w+\Delta) / 2, J_{y}=(w-\Delta) / 2, J_{z}=K$. See [13] for properties and analysis on the XYZ chain and related models.

One of the key achievements of [42] is that on a certain line in the parameter space, the Hamiltonian $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\text {int }}$ becomes frustration-free (that is, the ground state simultaneously minimises each interaction term).

Theorem 4.2 ([42]) Let $\Delta \in \mathbb{R}, \mu_{2}=\mu_{3}=\cdots=\mu_{L-1}=\mu_{e}$ and $\mu_{1}=\mu_{L}=\frac{\mu_{e}}{2}$ with $\mu_{e}=$ $4 \sqrt{K^{2}+w K+\frac{w^{2}-\Delta^{2}}{4}}$. Then
(i) $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{int}}$ has an explicit frustration-free and double degenerate ground state.
(ii) There is a $C^{1}$-path $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(t)$ such that $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(0)=\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\text {Kit }}$, the quadratic Hamiltonian from Equation (15), and $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(2 K)=\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{int}}$, the quartic Hamiltonian.
(iii) For all $t \geq 0, \mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(t)$ has a double degenerate ground state.
(iv) For all $t \geq 0, \mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(t)$ has a spectral gap above the ground state energy that is uniform in $|\Lambda|$.

As noted in [42], the equation for $\mu_{e}$ from Theorem 4.2 that ensures the interacting Kitaev chain has a frustration-free ground state has a direct analogue for the XYZ chain in a magnetic field, cf. [46].

### 4.3 Flux insertion and gap closing in the closed chain

Let us now insert a local flux into the interacting Kitaev chain. Our analysis closely follows [43, Appendix D], who considered the interacting Kitaev chain with twisted boundary conditions. We add
periodic boundary conditions to the Hamiltonian with a local flux,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\text {int }}(\alpha)= & -w\left(e^{-i \alpha} \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{2}+e^{i \alpha} \mathfrak{a}_{2}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{1}\right)+w\left(e^{i \alpha} \mathfrak{a}_{1} \mathfrak{a}_{2}+e^{-i \alpha} \mathfrak{a}_{2}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*}\right) \\
& +\sum_{j=2}^{L-1}\left(-w\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+\mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}\right)+w\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+\mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}\right)\right) \\
& -w\left(\mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{1}+\mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{L}\right)+w\left(\mathfrak{a}_{L} \mathfrak{a}_{1}+\mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}\right)-\frac{1}{2} \sum_{j=1}^{L} \mu_{j}\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}-1\right) \\
& +K \sum_{j=1}^{L-1}\left(2 \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}-1\right)\left(2 \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}-1\right)+K\left(2 \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{L}-1\right)\left(2 \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{1}-1\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

We choose a local flux to emphasise that highly local perturbations in closed chains are capable of closing a uniformly bounded ground state gap in the closed chain. This is in direct contrast to typical properties of ground states with Local Topological Quantum Order, where small perturbations will not close the ground state gap [49, 52].

We write the Hamiltonian as a $\operatorname{sum} \mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{int}}(\alpha)=\sum_{j=1}^{L} h_{j}(\alpha)$, where

$$
\begin{aligned}
h_{1}(\alpha)= & w\left(-e^{-i \alpha} \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{2}-e^{i \alpha} \mathfrak{a}_{2}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{1}+e^{i \alpha} \mathfrak{a}_{1} \mathfrak{a}_{2}+e^{-i \alpha} \mathfrak{a}_{2}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*}\right) \\
& -\frac{\mu_{e}}{2}\left(\mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{1}+\mathfrak{a}_{2}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{2}-1\right)+K\left(2 \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{1}-1\right)\left(2 \mathfrak{a}_{2}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{2}-1\right) \\
h_{j}= & w\left(-\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}-\mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}+\mathfrak{a}_{j} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+\mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}\right) \\
& -\frac{\mu_{e}}{2}\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}+\mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}-1\right)+K\left(2 \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}-1\right)\left(2 \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}-1\right), \quad 2 \leq j \leq l-1
\end{aligned}
$$

and lastly

$$
\begin{aligned}
h_{L}= & w\left(-\mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{1}-\mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{L}+\mathfrak{a}_{L} \mathfrak{a}_{1}+\mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}\right) \\
& -\frac{\mu}{2}\left(\mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{L}+\mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{1}-1\right)+K\left(2 \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{L}-1\right)\left(2 \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{1}-1\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

To study the flux insertion, we first explicitly solve the ground state space of $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\text {int }}(\alpha)$ at the end points $\alpha=0$ and $\alpha=\pi$. To assist our computations on the closed chain, we first determine the ground state space of the Hamiltonian with open boundary conditions $\sum_{j=1}^{L-1} h_{j}(\alpha)$.

When $\alpha=0$ and $\mu_{j}$ are as in Theorem 4.2, the ground states of the open chain are computed in [42] as the pair

$$
A_{L, \alpha=0}^{ \pm}|\Omega\rangle:=\left(1 \pm \beta \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*}\right)\left(1 \pm \beta \mathfrak{a}_{2}^{*}\right) \cdots\left(1 \pm \beta \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}\right)|\Omega\rangle, \quad \beta^{2}=\cot \left(\frac{\theta}{2}\right), \quad \theta=\arctan \left(\frac{2 w}{\mu_{e}}\right) \in[0, \pi]
$$

We note that $\mathcal{P} A_{L, \alpha=0}^{ \pm}|\Omega\rangle=A_{L, \alpha=0}^{\mp}|\Omega\rangle$ for $\mathcal{P}$ the parity operator.
For the case of $\alpha=\pi$. We can follow the same basic analysis as in [42], where we find that any state of the form

$$
\left(1 \pm \beta \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*}\right)\left(1 \mp \beta \mathfrak{a}_{2}^{*}\right) p\left(\mathfrak{a}_{3}^{*}, \ldots, \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}\right)|\Omega\rangle
$$

is a ground state of $h_{1}(\pi)$, where $p\left(\mathfrak{a}_{3}^{*}, \ldots, \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}\right)$ is a (non-zero) polynomial. Because the states $(1 \pm$ $\left.\beta \mathfrak{a}_{2}^{*}\right) \cdots\left(1 \pm \beta \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}\right)|\Omega\rangle$ minimise $\left\{h_{j}\right\}_{j=2}^{L-1}$, we have that

$$
A_{L, \alpha=\pi}^{ \pm}|\Omega\rangle:=\left(1 \mp \beta \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*}\right)\left(1 \pm \beta \mathfrak{a}_{2}^{*}\right)\left(1 \pm \beta \mathfrak{a}_{3}^{*}\right) \cdots\left(1 \pm \beta \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}\right)|\Omega\rangle
$$

gives a double degenerate and frustration-free ground state for $\sum_{j=1}^{L-1} h_{j}(\pi)$ with $\mathcal{P} A_{L, \alpha=\pi}^{ \pm}|\Omega\rangle=$ $A_{L, \alpha=\pi}^{\mp}|\Omega\rangle$.

Let us now consider the closed chain $\sum_{j=1}^{L} h_{j}(\alpha)$. We first note that any state of the form $(1 \pm$ $\left.\beta \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}\right)\left(1 \pm \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*}\right) p\left(\mathfrak{a}_{2}^{*}, \ldots, \mathfrak{a}_{L-1}^{*}\right)|\Omega\rangle$ will minimise $h_{L}$. When $\alpha=0, \pi$, the ground state can be solved provided that we take the coefficients $\mu_{1}=\mu_{2}=\ldots=\mu_{L}=\mu_{e}$ from Theorem 4.2.
Ground state at $\alpha=0$
We first note that any (normalised) linear combination of $A_{L, \alpha=0}^{ \pm}|\Omega\rangle$ will also give a ground state of $\sum_{j=1}^{L-1} h_{j}(0)$. Therefore, we compute

$$
\begin{aligned}
A_{L, \alpha=0}^{+}-A_{L, \alpha=0}^{-} & =\left(A_{L-1, \alpha=0}^{+}+A_{L-1, \alpha=0}^{-}\right)\left(1+\beta \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}\right)-2 A_{L-1, \alpha=0}^{-} \\
& =\left(1+\beta \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}\right)\left(A_{L-1, \alpha=0}^{+}+A_{L-1, \alpha=0}^{-}\right)-2 A_{L-1, \alpha=0}^{-} \\
& =\left(1+\beta \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}\right)\left(1+\beta \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*}\right) \cdots\left(1+\beta \mathfrak{a}_{L-1}^{*}\right)-\left(1-\beta \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}\right)\left(1-\beta \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*}\right) \cdots\left(1-\beta \mathfrak{a}_{L-1}^{*}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

which shows that (the normalisation of) $A_{L, \alpha=0}^{+}|\Omega\rangle-A_{L, \alpha=0}^{-}|\Omega\rangle$ is a frustration-free ground state of $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\text {int }}(0)$ on the closed chain. The linearly independent vector $A_{L, \alpha=0}^{+}|\Omega\rangle+A_{L, \alpha=0}^{-}|\Omega\rangle$ is not a ground state as it does not minimise $h_{L}$, something that is verified by direct computation. In particular, $\mathcal{P}\left(A_{L, \alpha=0}^{+}|\Omega\rangle-A_{L, \alpha=0}^{-}|\Omega\rangle\right)=-\left(A_{L, \alpha=0}^{+}|\Omega\rangle-A_{L, \alpha=0}^{-}|\Omega\rangle\right)$ and the ground state is odd.
Ground state at $\alpha=\pi$
Again we consider normalised linear combinations of $A_{L, \alpha=\pi}^{ \pm}|\Omega\rangle$, where we have that

$$
\begin{aligned}
A_{L, \alpha=\pi}^{+}+A_{L, \alpha=\pi}^{-}= & \left(A_{L-1, \alpha=\pi}^{+}-A_{L-1, \alpha=\pi}^{-}\right)\left(1+\beta \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}\right)+2 A_{L-1, \alpha=\pi}^{-} \\
= & \left(1-\beta \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}\right)\left(A_{L-1, \alpha=\pi}^{+}-A_{L-1, \alpha=\pi}^{-}\right)+2 A_{L-1, \alpha=\pi}^{-} \\
= & \left(1-\beta \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}\right)\left(1-\beta \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*}\right)\left(1+\beta \mathfrak{a}_{2}^{*}\right) \cdots\left(1+\beta \mathfrak{a}_{L-1}^{*}\right) \\
& +\left(1+\beta \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}\right)\left(1+\beta \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*}\right)\left(1-\beta \mathfrak{a}_{2}^{*}\right) \cdots\left(1-\beta \mathfrak{a}_{L-1}^{*}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence, the normalisation of $A_{L, \alpha=\pi}^{+}|\Omega\rangle+A_{L, \alpha=\pi}^{-}|\Omega\rangle$ is a frustration-free ground state of $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{int}}(\pi)$ on the closed chain with even parity. In contrast, the vector $A_{L, \alpha=\pi}^{+}|\Omega\rangle-A_{L, \alpha=\pi}^{-}|\Omega\rangle$ does not minimise $h_{L}(\pi)$ and so is not a ground state.

Because the interacting Kitaev chain with flux has a unique ground state at the endpoints $\alpha=0, \pi$ but with opposite parity, we can apply Lemma 4.1 and obtain that the ground state gap closes along the path $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(\alpha)$. As we will show in Proposition 4.3, this is despite the fact that the endpoints have a uniformly bounded ground state gap and we take a local flux only.

## Connection to Kitaev's $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index

Proposition 4.3 The Hamiltonians $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{int}}(0)$ and $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{int}}(\pi)$ can be connected to quadratic Hamiltonians by a $C^{1}$-path along which the ground state gap is uniformly bounded.

Proof. Similar to the case of Theorem 4.2, we write an explicit path connecting the interacting and non-interacting Hamiltonians.

For $\alpha=0$, recalling the constant $\theta=\arctan \left(\frac{2 w}{\mu_{e}}\right)$ and using the notation $\mathfrak{n}_{j}=\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}$, we take the
following path $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(0, t)=\sum_{j=1}^{L} h_{j}(0, t)$, where for $1 \leq j \leq L-1$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
h_{j}(0, t)= & -\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}-\mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}+(1+t) \sin (\theta)\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+\mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}\right)-(1+t) \cos (\theta)\left(1-\mathfrak{n}_{j}-\mathfrak{n}_{j+1}\right) \\
& +\frac{t}{2}\left(2 \mathfrak{n}_{j}-1\right)\left(2 \mathfrak{n}_{j+1}-1\right)+1+\frac{t}{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
\begin{aligned}
h_{L}(0, t)= & -\mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{1}-\mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{L}+(1+t) \sin (\theta)\left(\mathfrak{a}_{L} \mathfrak{a}_{1}+\mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}\right)-(1+t) \cos (\theta)\left(1-\mathfrak{n}_{L}-\mathfrak{n}_{1}\right) \\
& +\frac{t}{2}\left(2 \mathfrak{n}_{L}-1\right)\left(2 \mathfrak{n}_{1}-1\right)+1+\frac{t}{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

We see that $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(0,0)$ is the quadratic Hamiltonian on a closed chain studied in Section 3.8 (up to a scaling of the constants) and $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(0,2 K)$ is the interacting chain with ground state energy shifted to 0 . A direct computation gives that

$$
\begin{aligned}
h_{j}(0, t) & =Q_{j} Q_{j}^{*}+(1+t) Q_{j}^{*} Q_{j} \\
Q_{j} & = \begin{cases}\cos \left(\frac{\theta}{2}\right)\left(-\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}\left(1-\mathfrak{n}_{j+1}\right)+\mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*}\left(1-\mathfrak{n}_{j}\right)\right)-\sin \left(\frac{\theta}{2}\right)\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j} \mathfrak{n}_{j+1}+\mathfrak{a}_{j+1} \mathfrak{n}_{j}\right), & j \leq L-1 \\
\cos \left(\frac{\theta}{2}\right)\left(-\mathfrak{a}_{L}^{*}\left(1-\mathfrak{n}_{1}\right)+\mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*}\left(1-\mathfrak{n}_{L}\right)\right)-\sin \left(\frac{\theta}{2}\right)\left(+\mathfrak{a}_{L} \mathfrak{n}_{1}+\mathfrak{a}_{1} \mathfrak{n}_{L}\right) & j=L\end{cases}
\end{aligned}
$$

which implies that $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(0, t) \geq \mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(0,0)$ for all $t \geq 0$. Furthermore, $Q_{j} A_{L, \alpha=0}^{ \pm}|\Omega\rangle=Q_{j}^{*} A_{L, \alpha=0}^{ \pm}|\Omega\rangle=0$, so $A_{L, \alpha=0}^{+}|\Omega\rangle-A_{L, \alpha=0}^{-}|\Omega\rangle$ is a 0 -energy ground state throughout the path. Because the ground state energy gap is uniformly bounded at $t=0$ by Proposition 3.11 , the inequality $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(0, t) \geq \mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(0,0)$ then ensures that the ground state gap is uniformly bounded for all $t \geq 0$.

The case of $\alpha=\pi$ follows the same argument. In particular, we take $h_{j}(\pi, t)=h_{j}(0, t)$ for $j \geq 2$ and

$$
\begin{aligned}
h_{1}(\pi, t)= & \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{2}+\mathfrak{a}_{2}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{1}+(1+t) \sin (\theta)\left(-\mathfrak{a}_{1} \mathfrak{a}_{2}-\mathfrak{a}_{2}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*}\right)-(1+t) \cos (\theta)\left(1-\mathfrak{n}_{1}-\mathfrak{n}_{2}\right) \\
& +\frac{t}{2}\left(2 \mathfrak{n}_{1}-1\right)\left(2 \mathfrak{n}_{2}-1\right)+1+\frac{t}{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

Similarly, we take

$$
Q_{1}=\cos \left(\frac{\theta}{2}\right)\left(\mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*}\left(1-\mathfrak{n}_{2}\right)+\mathfrak{a}_{2}^{*}\left(1-\mathfrak{n}_{1}\right)\right)+\sin \left(\frac{\theta}{2}\right)\left(\mathfrak{a}_{1} \mathfrak{n}_{2}-\mathfrak{a}_{2} \mathfrak{n}_{1}\right)
$$

and $Q_{j}$ the same as $\alpha=0$ for $j \geq 2$.
Using the homotopy from Proposition 4.3, we can consider the path

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(0,2 K) \xrightarrow{t} \mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(0,0) \xrightarrow{\alpha} \mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(\pi, 0) \xrightarrow{t} \mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}(\pi, 2 K) \tag{38}
\end{equation*}
$$

which connects $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{int}}(0)$ and $\mathbf{H}_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{int}}(\pi)$ on the closed chain. Because there is no changes in the ground state space along the paths indexed by $t$, there can not be any $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow along these paths. By contrast, the path indexed by $\alpha$ will have a non-trivial $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow as discussed in Remark 3.13. Therefore by the concatenation properties of the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow, we obtain the following.

Proposition 4.4 The path of Hamiltonians given in Equation (38) gives rise to a non-trivial $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$ valued spectral flow. In particular, the ground state gap closes at a point along the path and the ground state becomes doubly degenerate.

## 5 Quasifree ground states of the infinite CAR algebra

The remainder of the paper considers infinite systems and ground states of the CAR algebra $A^{\text {car }}(\mathcal{H})$ over an infinite dimensional separable Hilbert space $\mathcal{H}$. We are particularly interested in pure ground states, which cannot be written as a convex combination of other states. A state $\omega$ is pure if and only if its GNS representation $\pi_{\omega}$ is irreducible [17, Theorem 2.3.19]. A key difference to CAR algebras over finite dimensional $\mathcal{H}$ is that different pure states $\omega_{0}$ and $\omega_{1}$ of $A^{\text {car }}(\mathcal{H})$ can give inequivalent GNS representations, so there is no unitary $U: \mathfrak{h}_{\omega_{0}} \rightarrow \mathfrak{h}_{\omega_{1}}$ intertwining the representations. This can be used to distinguish pure ground states.

For this section, we will restrict to quasifree states on $A^{\text {car }}(\mathcal{H})$ as they are more simple to work with. To determine criteria for pure quasifree states to be equivalent, it is useful to work with the self-dual CAR algebra introduced by Araki [1], where equivalence of representations of quasifree states can be reduced to a Hilbert-Schmidt condition ( $c f$. Theorem 5.1 below). A more detailed introduction to quasifree states of the CAR algebra and their basic properties can be found in [32, Chapter 6].

### 5.1 Quasifree states of the self-dual CAR algebra

Let us fix a separable complex Hilbert space $\mathcal{H}$ and a real structure $\Gamma$, namely an anti-unitary involution. Typically we will be interested in the case that $\mathcal{H}=\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}=\ell^{2}(\Lambda) \otimes \mathbb{C}^{2}$ is a Nambu space with $\Lambda$ countable and particle-hole involution $\Gamma=\mathcal{C}\left(\mathbf{1} \otimes \sigma_{1}\right)$ with $\mathcal{C}$ complex conjugation. The self-dual CAR algebra $A_{\mathrm{sd}}^{\mathrm{car}}(\mathcal{H}, \Gamma)$ is the $C^{*}$-algebra generated by 1 and $\mathfrak{c}(v)$ for $v \in \mathcal{H}$ such that $v \mapsto \mathfrak{c}(v)$ is linear and with relations

$$
\mathfrak{c}(v)^{*}=\mathfrak{c}(\Gamma v), \quad\left\{\mathfrak{c}(v)^{*}, \mathfrak{c}(w)\right\}=\langle v, w\rangle_{\mathcal{H}}
$$

The self-dual CAR algebra is also graded with parity automorphism $\Theta$ such that $\mathfrak{c}(v)$ is odd for all $v \in \mathcal{H}$. One recovers the more familiar CAR algebra by means of a basis projection, which is a projection $E$ on $\mathcal{H}$ such that $E+\Gamma E \Gamma=\mathbf{1}_{\mathcal{H}}$. Given a basis projection, there is a graded isomorphism $\phi: A^{\mathrm{car}}(E \mathcal{H}) \rightarrow A_{\mathrm{sd}}^{\mathrm{car}}(\mathcal{H}, \Gamma)$ which on generators is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{a}^{*}(E v) \mapsto \mathfrak{c}(E v), \quad \mathfrak{a}(E v) \mapsto \mathfrak{c}(\Gamma E v) \tag{39}
\end{equation*}
$$

In the case $\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}} \cong \ell^{2}(\Lambda) \otimes \mathbb{C}^{2} \cong \ell^{2}(\Lambda) \oplus \ell^{2}(\Lambda)$ with $\Gamma=\mathcal{C}\left(\mathbf{1} \otimes \sigma_{1}\right)$, then analogous to the case of the usual CAR algebra, we can choose the canonical basis of $\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}$ and so $A_{\mathrm{sd}}^{\mathrm{car}}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}, \Gamma\right)$ is the universal $C^{*}$-algebra generated by the elements $\{\mathfrak{c}(j, k)\}_{(j, k) \in \Lambda \times \Lambda}$ satisfying the relations

$$
\mathfrak{c}(j, k)^{*}=\mathfrak{c}(k, j), \quad\left\{\mathfrak{c}\left(j_{1}, k_{1}\right)^{*}, \mathfrak{c}\left(j_{2}, k_{2}\right)\right\}=2 \delta_{j_{1}, j_{2}} \delta_{k_{1}, k_{2}}
$$

In the case of $\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}$, the basis projection $\tilde{E}\left(u_{1}, u_{2}\right)=u_{1}$ is of particular interest as $\tilde{E} \mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}=\ell^{2}(\Lambda)$ and (39) leads to a concrete form of the isomorphism $\phi: A_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{car}} \rightarrow A_{\mathrm{sd}}^{\mathrm{car}}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}, \Gamma\right)$ given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}\right)=\mathfrak{c}(j, 0), \quad \phi^{-1}(\mathfrak{c}(j, k))=\mathfrak{a}_{j}+\mathfrak{a}_{k}^{*} \tag{40}
\end{equation*}
$$

Theorem 5.1 ([1]) Let $E$ be a basis projection on $\mathcal{H}$.
(i) There is a quasifree state $\omega_{E}$ on $A_{\mathrm{sd}}^{\mathrm{car}}(\mathcal{H}, \Gamma)$ with

$$
\omega_{E}\left(\mathfrak{c}(u)^{*} \mathfrak{c}(v)\right)=\langle u, E v\rangle_{\mathcal{H}}
$$

which is extended to $A_{\mathrm{sd}}^{\mathrm{car}}(\mathcal{H}, \Gamma)$ by the formulas

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \omega_{E}\left(\mathfrak{c}\left(v_{1}\right) \cdots \mathfrak{c}\left(v_{2 n+1}\right)\right)=0 \\
& \omega_{E}\left(\mathfrak{c}\left(v_{1}\right) \cdots \mathfrak{c}\left(v_{2 n}\right)\right)=(-1)^{n(n-1) / 2} \sum_{\sigma}(-1)^{\sigma} \prod_{j=1}^{n} \omega_{E}\left(\mathfrak{c}\left(v_{\sigma(j)}\right) \mathfrak{c}\left(v_{\sigma(j+n)}\right)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

where the sum is over permutations $\sigma$ such that

$$
\sigma(1)<\sigma(2)<\ldots<\sigma(n), \quad \sigma(j)<\sigma(j+n), \quad j=1, \ldots, n .
$$

(ii) The state $\omega_{E}$ is pure and $\Theta$-invariant. In particular, the $G N S$ representation $\left(\mathfrak{h}_{E}, \pi_{E}, \Omega_{E}\right)$ associated to $\omega_{E}$ is irreducible.
(iii) Let $E_{0}$ and $E_{1}$ be basis projections on $\mathcal{H}$. The following statements are equivalent:
(1) The states $\omega_{E_{0}}$ and $\omega_{E_{1}}$ are unitarily equivalent.
(2) The operator $E_{0}-E_{1}$ is in the ideal of Hilbert-Schmidt operators.

The state $\omega_{E}$ is called the Fock state associated to a basis projection $E$. From the state $\omega_{E}$ on $A_{\mathrm{sd}}^{\mathrm{car}}(\mathcal{H}, \Gamma)$, we can use the isomorphism $\phi: A^{\mathrm{car}}(E \mathcal{H}) \rightarrow A_{\mathrm{sd}}^{\mathrm{car}}(\mathcal{H}, \Gamma)$ from Equation (39) to get a state $\omega_{E} \circ \phi$ on $A^{\text {car }}(E \mathcal{H})$. In a slight abuse of notation, we will also denote this state by $\omega_{E}$ and call it a quasifree state on $A^{\mathrm{car}}(E \mathcal{H})$. Given two basis projections $E_{0}$ and $E_{1}$ on a separable and infinite dimensional $\mathcal{H}$, the corresponding CAR algebras $A^{\mathrm{car}}\left(E_{0} \mathcal{H}\right)$ and $A^{\mathrm{car}}\left(E_{1} \mathcal{H}\right)$ are abstractly isomorphic by the universal property of the infinite CAR algebra [18, Theorem 5.2.5]. Theorem 5.1 then gives a sufficient and necessary condition for the irreducible GNS representations $\pi_{E_{0}}$ and $\pi_{E_{1}}$ to be unitarily equivalent.

Following [32, Section 6.6], let us us give some some further justification as to why $\omega_{E}$ is called a Fock state. Given a basis projection $E$ on $\mathcal{H}$, let $\left(\mathfrak{h}_{E}, \pi_{E}, \Omega_{E}\right)$ be the GNS triple of $A^{\text {car }}(E \mathcal{H})$. Setting $\bigwedge^{0} E \mathcal{H}=\mathbb{C} \Omega_{E}$, the one-dimensional space spanned by the cyclic vector $\Omega_{E}$, one can identify

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{h}_{E} \cong \bigoplus_{n=0}^{\infty} \bigwedge^{n} E \mathcal{H} \tag{41}
\end{equation*}
$$

Under this equivalence, the GNS representation of $A^{\text {car }}(E \mathcal{H})$ can be written as

$$
\pi_{E}\left(\mathfrak{a}^{*}(v)\right) u_{1} \wedge \cdots \wedge u_{n}=v \wedge u_{1} \wedge \cdots \wedge u_{n}, \quad v, u_{j} \in E \mathcal{H}
$$

That is, the cyclic vector $\Omega_{E}$ acts as the fermionic vacuum in the GNS space.

### 5.2 Quasifree dynamics and BdG Hamiltonians

Let us now consider ground states $\omega$ on $A_{\mathrm{sd}}^{\mathrm{car}}(\mathcal{H}, \Gamma)$ with respect to a strongly continuous $\mathbb{R}$-action $\beta$ : $\mathbb{R} \rightarrow \operatorname{Aut}\left(A_{\mathrm{sd}}^{\text {car }}(\mathcal{H}, \Gamma)\right)$ with generator $\delta$, namely states satisfying $-i \omega\left(a^{*} \delta(a)\right) \geq 0$ for all $a \in \operatorname{Dom}(\delta)$.

Definition 5.2 The dynamics $\beta: \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \operatorname{Aut}\left(A_{\mathrm{sd}}^{\mathrm{car}}(\mathcal{H}, \Gamma)\right)$ is called quasifree if $\beta_{t}(\mathfrak{c}(v))=\mathfrak{c}\left(e^{i H t} v\right)$ for any $\mathfrak{c}(v) \in A_{\mathrm{sd}}^{\mathrm{car}}(\mathcal{H}, \Gamma)$ and where $H=H^{*}$ is an operator on $\mathcal{H}$ such that $\Gamma H \Gamma=-H$.

The self-adjoint operator $H$ on $\mathcal{H}$ that generates the quasifree dynamics $\beta$ plays the role of the Bogoliubov-de Gennes Hamiltonian in infinite systems, and will be referred to as the BdG Hamiltonian. Again, this operator comes with a natural particle-hole symmetry. Thus quasifree dynamics play an analogous role to quadratic interactions.

Proposition 5.3 ([32], Proposition 6.37) Let $\beta: \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \operatorname{Aut}\left(A_{\mathrm{sd}}^{\mathrm{car}}(\mathcal{H}, \Gamma)\right)$ be a quasifree dynamics with BdG Hamiltonian $H$. If $0 \notin \sigma(H)$, then the Fock state $\omega_{E}$ associated to the spectral projection $E=\chi_{(0, \infty)}(H)$ is the unique ground state for the dynamics $\beta$. Furthermore, the GNS Hamiltonian $h_{\omega}$ on $\mathfrak{h}_{E}$ has a spectral gap above 0 .

Proof. The particle-hole symmetry of $H$ implies that $\Gamma E \Gamma=\mathbf{1}_{\mathcal{H}}-E$, so $E$ is a basis projection. The proof that $\omega_{E}$ is a ground state comes from the cited proposition. To show the spectral gap, we use the presentation of $\mathfrak{h}_{E}$ as a Fock space from Equation (41). In particular, the GNS Hamiltonian $h_{\omega}$ can be written as the the second quantisation of the BdG Hamiltonian $H$ restricted to antisymmetric tensors on $E \mathcal{H}$. Because there is a strictly positive spectral gap around 0 of $\sigma(H)$ and $h_{\omega}$ comes from the restriction of $H$ to the positive spectral projection $E$, its second quantisation is strictly positive. Hence there is some $\gamma>0$ such that $\sigma\left(h_{\omega}\right) \cap(0, \gamma)=\emptyset$.

Proposition 5.3 shows that any BdG Hamiltonian $H$ on the Nambu space $(\mathcal{H}, \Gamma)$ with a spectral gap at 0 gives rise to a basis projection $E=\chi_{(0, \infty)}(H)$ and a gapped pure ground state $\omega_{E}$ on $A_{\mathrm{sd}}^{\mathrm{car}}(\mathcal{H}, \Gamma) \cong A^{\mathrm{car}}(E \mathcal{H})$. This process is reversible: given a basis projection $E$ on $\mathcal{H}$, one can define a gapped BdG Hamiltonian $H=2 E-1$. The quasifree state $\omega_{E}$ will then be the unique ground state for the quasifree dynamics generated by $H$.

Given two quasifree actions $\beta^{(0)}$ and $\beta^{(1)}$ on $A_{\mathrm{sd}}^{\mathrm{car}}(\mathcal{H}, \Gamma)$ arising from gapped BdG Hamiltonians $H_{0}$ and $H_{1}$ on $\mathcal{H}$, one has two basis projections $E_{0}$ and $E_{1}$. It is known that the two ground state representations $\pi_{E_{0}}$ and $\pi_{E_{1}}$ are equivalent if and only if $E_{0}-E_{1}$ is Hilbert-Schmidt. Let us further investigate this issue by defining the skew-adjoint real unitary operators

$$
J_{k}=i H_{k}\left|H_{k}\right|^{-1}=i\left(2 E_{k}-\mathbf{1}\right), \quad J_{k}^{*}=-J_{k}, \quad J_{k}^{2}=-\mathbf{1}, \quad \Gamma J_{k} \Gamma=J_{k}
$$

Hence, the operators $J_{k}$ define a complex structure on the real Hilbert space $\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}^{\Gamma}=\{v \in \mathcal{H}: \Gamma v=v\}$.
We now make use of the following elementary fact.
Lemma 5.4 The orthogonal group acts transitively on the complex structures on a real Hilbert space.
Proof. If $J$ is a complex structure on a real Hilbert space $\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}$, it extends by linearity to a complex linear operator on the complexification $\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{C}}=\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}} \otimes \mathbb{C}$ which is denoted by the same letter $J$. It is real in the sense that $J$ is equal to $\bar{J}=\mathcal{C} J \mathcal{C}$. This complexifation is skew-adjoint and unitary, so that $i J$ is a selfadjoint unitary on $\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{C}}$. By the spectral theorem and the reality of $J$, there is thus a projection $P$ on $\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{C}}$ such that $i J=2 P-\mathbf{1}$ and $\bar{P}=\mathbf{1}-P$. Let $\Phi: \ell^{2}(\mathbb{N}) \rightarrow \mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{C}}$ be a frame for $P$, namely $\Phi \Phi^{*}=P$ and $\Phi^{*} \Phi=\mathbf{1}$. Here $\ell^{2}(\mathbb{N})$ is a complex Hilbert space equipped with complex conjugation $\mathcal{C}$ (entry-wise). Then $J=i\left(\Phi \Phi^{*}-\bar{\Phi} \bar{\Phi}^{*}\right)$ and $\Phi^{*} \bar{\Phi}=0$. Now set $V=2^{-\frac{1}{2}}(\Phi+\bar{\Phi}, i \bar{\Phi}-i \Phi)$ which is real and unitary from $\ell^{2}(\mathbb{N}) \oplus \ell^{2}(\mathbb{N})$ to $\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{C}}$. Moreover, one checks

$$
J=V\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & \mathbf{1} \\
-\mathbf{1} & 0
\end{array}\right) V^{*}
$$

This is a normal form for $J$. Now given two complex structures $J_{0}, J_{1}$, there are two associated orthogonals $V_{0}, V_{1}: \ell^{2}(\mathbb{N}) \oplus \ell^{2}(\mathbb{N}) \rightarrow \mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{C}}$. Set $W=V_{1} V_{0}^{*}$. This is an orthogonal on $\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{C}}$ which hence restricts to $\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}$ as a linear opertor. One then has $J_{1}=W J_{0} W^{*}$ which implies the claim.

Applying Lemma 5.4 to the complex structures $J_{k}=i\left(2 E_{k}-\mathbf{1}\right)$ with $k=0$, 1 , there exists a unitary $W \in \mathcal{U}(\mathcal{H})$ with properties

$$
J_{1}=W J_{0} W^{*}, \quad W^{*} W=W W^{*}=\mathbf{1}, \quad \Gamma W \Gamma=W
$$

Hence $W$ is the infinite dimensional analogue of the canonical transformations in Section 3.2 and so we continue to call such unitaries canonical transformations. In order for $W$ to give a Bogoluibov transformation on the second quantised Fock space $\mathcal{F}\left(E_{0} \mathcal{H}\right) \rightarrow \mathcal{F}\left(E_{1} \mathcal{H}\right)$, the representations $\pi_{E_{0}}$ and $\pi_{E_{1}}$ must be equivalent, which occurs if and only if $\left[J_{0}, W\right]$ is Hilbert-Schmidt.

Example 5.5 (Kitaev chain): Let us briefly show how Theorem 5.1 applies to the Kitaev chain on the infinite lattice $\Lambda=\mathbb{Z}$. To make the formulas a little simpler and as a preparation for another example in Section 5.6, let us choose the parameter $\Delta=-i w$. Then the Kitaev Hamiltonian on a finite region $[a, b] \cap \mathbb{Z}$ becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{H}_{[a, b]}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(\mu, w)=-w \sum_{j=a}^{b-1}\left[\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+\mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}+i \mathfrak{a}_{j} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}-i \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}\right]+\mu \sum_{j=a}^{b}\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}-\frac{1}{2}\right) . \tag{42}
\end{equation*}
$$

The local Hamiltonians $\mathbf{H}_{[a, b]}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(\mu, w)$ give the infinite Kitaev chain which will be studied via the quasifree dynamics generated by BdG Hamiltonian $H_{\mathbb{Z}}$ defined on $\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}=\ell^{2}(\mathbb{Z}) \otimes \mathbb{C}^{2}$. As in (16),

$$
H_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(\mu, w)=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
-w\left(S+S^{*}\right)-\mu & -i w\left(S^{*}-S\right)  \tag{43}\\
-i w\left(S^{*}-S\right) & w\left(S+S^{*}\right)+\mu
\end{array}\right)
$$

with $S$ the unilateral shift operator on $\ell^{2}(\mathbb{Z})$.
As in the case of finite chains, one expects a difference between the trivial region $w=0$ and the non-trivial region $\mu=0$. To compare these systems let us consider the unitary

$$
W=\frac{i}{2}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
(\mathbf{1}+S) & i(\mathbf{1}-S) \\
i(\mathbf{1}-S) & -(\mathbf{1}+S)
\end{array}\right), \quad W^{*} W=W W^{*}=\mathbf{1}, \quad \Gamma W \Gamma=W
$$

which has the property

$$
W\left(\begin{array}{cc}
-\mu & 0 \\
0 & \mu
\end{array}\right) W^{*}=-\frac{\mu}{2}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\left(S+S^{*}\right) & i\left(S^{*}-S\right) \\
i\left(S^{*}-S\right) & -\left(S+S^{*}\right)
\end{array}\right)
$$

Hence $W$ maps the trivial system $H_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(\mu, 0)$ to the non-trivial Hamiltonian $H_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{Kit}}\left(0, \frac{\mu}{2}\right)$. Passing to the spectrally flattened complex structures, $W\left(-i \sigma_{z}\right) W^{*}=J$ with $J$ the complex structure associated to the Kitaev chain $H_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {Kit }}\left(0, \frac{1}{2}\right)$. We note that $\mathrm{Ad}_{W}$ plays the role of the Kramers-Wannier automorphism in the quantum Ising chain.

By Theorem 5.1, the ground states for parameters $(\mu, 0)$ and $\left(0, \frac{\mu}{2}\right)$ are equivalent if and only if [ $-i \sigma_{z}, W$ ] is Hilbert-Schmidt. But this is clearly not the case as $S-\mathbf{1}$ is not Hilbert-Schmidt. Hence, by studying the GNS representations of the quasifree ground states, one can distinguish between the trivial and non-trivial region of the infinite Kitaev chain.

### 5.3 Quasifree ground states on the even subalgebra

The algebras $A_{\mathrm{sd}}^{\mathrm{car}}(\mathcal{H}, \Gamma)$ and $A^{\mathrm{car}}(E \mathcal{H})$ are naturally graded by the parity automorphism $\Theta$. We are most interested in ground states arising from $\Theta$-invariant interactions, so it is also natural to consider of representations of Fock states restricted to the even subalgebra of the CAR algebra.

To align our approach with standard texts, e.g. [32, 6], we set some notation. If $E_{0}, E_{1}$ are basis projections with $E_{0}-E_{1}$ Hilbert-Schmidt, let $E_{0} \wedge\left(1-E_{1}\right)$ be the spectral projection $\chi_{\{1\}}\left(E_{0}-E_{1}\right)$, which is finite-rank by the Hilbert-Schmidt hypothesis [2].

Theorem 5.6 ([2], Theorem 4) Let $E_{0}, E_{1} \in \mathcal{B}(\mathcal{H})$ be basis projections with corresponding Fock states $\omega_{E_{0}}$ and $\omega_{E_{1}}$. The restrictions of $\omega_{E_{0}}$ and $\omega_{E_{1}}$ to the even subalgebra $A^{\mathrm{car}}\left(E_{i} \mathcal{H}\right)^{0}$ give rise to equivalent representations if and only if $E_{0}-E_{1}$ is Hilbert-Schmidt and $\operatorname{dim}\left(E_{0} \wedge\left(\mathbf{1}-E_{1}\right)\right)$ is even.

Let $\beta$ be a quasifree dynamics with BdG Hamiltonian $H=-\Gamma H \Gamma$ on $\mathcal{H}$ with $0 \notin \sigma(H)$. By Proposition 5.3, the Fock state $\omega_{E}$ for $E=\chi_{(0, \infty)}(H)$ is the unique ground state on $A_{\mathrm{sd}}^{\mathrm{car}}(\mathcal{H}, \Gamma)$ relative to $\beta$. We now consider the restriction of $\omega_{E}$ to $A_{\mathrm{sd}}^{\text {car }}(\mathcal{H}, \Gamma)^{0} \cong A^{\text {car }}(E \mathcal{H})^{0}$.

Theorem 5.7 ([32], Theorem 6.38) Let $\beta$ be a quasifree dynamics with BdG Hamiltonian $H$ such that $0 \notin \sigma(H)$. There exists a unique ground state for $\left(A^{\mathrm{car}}(E \mathcal{H})^{0}, \beta\right)$ if and only if the infimum of the positive part of the spectrum of $H$ is not an eigenvalue of $H$. If this is the case, the restriction of $\omega_{E}$ to $A^{\mathrm{car}}(E \mathcal{H})^{0}$ is the unique ground state.

If the infimum of the positive spectrum of $H$ is an eigenvalue $\lambda$ with eigenprojection $E^{\lambda}$, then an extremal ground state of $\left(A^{\operatorname{car}}(E \mathcal{H})^{0}, \beta\right)$ is either the restriction of $\omega_{E}$ to $A^{\operatorname{car}}(E \mathcal{H})^{0}$ or the quasifree state $\omega_{\nu}$ constructed from the basis projection $E-P_{\nu}+\Gamma P_{\nu} \Gamma$, where $E^{\lambda} \nu=\nu$ and $P_{\nu}(v)=\left\langle\frac{\nu}{\|\nu\|}, v\right\rangle \frac{\nu}{\|\nu\|}$. The representations of the states $\left\{\omega_{\nu}\right\}_{\nu \in \operatorname{Ran}\left(E^{\lambda}\right)}$ are all equivalent and disjoint from the restriction of $\omega_{E}$ to $A^{\mathrm{car}}(E \mathcal{H})^{0}$.

### 5.4 The index map on canonical transformations

This section uses an index map for canonical transformations on infinite systems to assign a topological phase label to quasifree ground states and BdG Hamiltonians. This index was previously studied by Araki [1], Araki-Evans [2] and Carey-O'Brien [23]. A similar exposition to ours can be found in [22].

For the sake of concreteness, let us fix a countable set $\Lambda$ and the Nambu space $\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}=\ell^{2}(\Lambda) \otimes \mathbb{C}^{2}$ with particle-hole involution $\Gamma=\mathcal{C}\left(\mathbf{1} \otimes \sigma_{1}\right)$. The results below can readily be adapted to the case of an arbitrary separable Hilbert space with real structure.

Let $E$ be a basis projection on $\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}$ and $J=i(2 E-\mathbf{1})$ a skew-adjoint unitary such that $\Gamma J \Gamma=J$. In particular, $J$ is well-defined on the real subspace $\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}^{\Gamma}=\left\{v \in \mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}: \Gamma v=v\right\}$. If $\tilde{E}$ is another basis projection giving rise to another $\tilde{J}$, there is a unitary $W \in \mathcal{U}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}\right), \Gamma W \Gamma=W$ such that $\tilde{J}=W J W^{*}$, see Lemma 5.4. One obtains a Bogoliubov transformation $\mathbf{U}_{W}$ on $\mathcal{F}\left(\ell^{2}(\Lambda)\right)$ and the two representations $\pi_{E}$ and $\pi_{\tilde{E}}$ of $A_{\Lambda}^{\text {car }}$ are equivalent if and only if $[W, J] \in \mathcal{L}^{2}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}\right)$, the ideal of Hilbert-Schmidt operators [63, 55].

Lemma 5.8 ([23]) Let $E$ be a basis projection and $J=i(2 E-\mathbf{1})$ a complex structure on $\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}^{\Gamma}$. Define

$$
\mathcal{U}_{J}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}, \Gamma\right)=\left\{W \in \mathcal{U}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}\right): \Gamma W \Gamma=W,[J, W] \in \mathcal{L}^{2}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}\right)\right\} .
$$

(i) If $W \in \mathcal{U}_{J}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}, \Gamma\right)$, then $\frac{1}{2}\left(J+W J W^{*}\right)$ is Fredholm.
(ii) The Banach Lie group $\mathcal{U}_{J}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}, \Gamma\right)$ has the same homotopy type as the group $\underset{\longrightarrow}{\lim } \mathcal{O}_{2 n} / \mathcal{U}_{n}$. In particular, $\pi_{0}\left(\mathcal{U}_{J}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}, \Gamma\right)\right) \cong \mathbb{Z}_{2}$.

Given $W \in \mathcal{U}_{J}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}, \Gamma\right),\left\|J-W J W^{*}\right\|_{\mathcal{Q}}=0$ and so we can apply the continuous index map from Proposition 2.5.

Proposition $5.9([23,30,16])$ For $W \in \mathcal{U}_{J}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}, \Gamma\right)$ the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index of Proposition 2.5,

$$
j_{J}(W)=\operatorname{Ind}_{2}\left(J, W J W^{*}\right)=(-1)^{\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{dim} \operatorname{Ker}\left(J+W J W^{*}\right)},
$$

induces an isomorphism of $\pi_{0}\left(\mathcal{U}_{J}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}, \Gamma\right)\right)$ to $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$.
Note that $j_{J}(W)=j_{J}\left(W^{*}\right)$ and that $j_{V J V^{*}}\left(V W V^{*}\right)=j_{J}(W)$ for any canonical transformation $V=\Gamma V \Gamma$. The index map from Proposition 5.9 requires a choice of complex structure $J$, which is equivalent to a choice of basis projection on $\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}$. By imposing stronger conditions on the unitaries, one can remove the necessity of making a choice of complex structure.

Proposition 5.10 Let $W \in \mathcal{U}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}\right)$ satisfy $\Gamma W \Gamma=W$. Then $W \in \mathcal{U}_{J}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}, \Gamma\right)$ for any complex structure $J=i(2 E-\mathbf{1})$ if and only if $W+\mathbf{1}$ or $W-\mathbf{1}$ is Hilbert-Schmidt. In this particular situation, $j_{J}(W)$ is independent of $J$.

Proof. The equivalence is shown in [1, Theorem 8]. For the second claim, let $J^{\prime}=V J V^{*}$ be another complex structure. Then $j_{J^{\prime}}(W)=j_{J}\left(V^{*} W V\right)$ and $s \in[0,1] \mapsto\left(V^{s}\right)^{*} W V^{s}$ is a path in $\mathcal{U}_{J}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}, \Gamma\right)$ along which the index does not change by Proposition 5.9, so that $j_{J}\left(V^{*} W V\right)=j_{J}(W)$.

Remark 5.11 For $W \in \mathcal{U}_{J}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}, \Gamma\right)$, one can consider the path of skew-adjoint Fredholm operators

$$
[0,1] \ni t \mapsto J_{t}=(1-t) J+t W J W^{*}, \quad t \in[0,1] .
$$

Then

$$
j_{J}(W)=(-1)^{\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{dim} \operatorname{Ker}\left(J+W J W^{*}\right)}=\mathrm{Sf}_{2}\left(t \in[0,1] \mapsto(1-t) J+t W J W^{*}\right)
$$

by the definition of $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow.
Example 5.12 Let us consider the case of $J=i \sigma_{3}$. Then any $W \in \mathcal{U}_{i \sigma_{3}}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}, \Gamma\right)$ has the form

$$
W=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
u & v \\
\bar{v} & \bar{u}
\end{array}\right), \quad v \in \mathcal{L}^{2}\left(\ell^{2}(\Lambda)\right), \quad u \text { Fredholm. }
$$

In this case, the expression for the index map $j_{i \sigma_{3}}: \mathcal{U}_{i \sigma_{3}}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}, \Gamma\right) \rightarrow \mathbb{Z}_{2}$ can be written more simply. Namely,

$$
\begin{equation*}
j_{i \sigma_{3}}(W)=(-1)^{\operatorname{dim} \operatorname{Ker}(u)} . \tag{44}
\end{equation*}
$$

For a finite lattice $\Lambda$, any unitary $W=\Gamma W \Gamma \in \mathcal{U}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}\right)$ will be in the group $\mathcal{U}_{i \sigma_{3}}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}, \Gamma\right)$. In this case, $j_{i \sigma_{3}}(W)=\operatorname{sgn} \operatorname{det}(W)$, so the index map in Equation (44) provides a generalisation of Kitaev's index from Section 3.4 to infinite chains.

Suppose that $\Lambda$ is countably infinite and let $P \in \mathcal{B}\left(\ell^{2}(\Lambda)\right)$ be a finite rank projection. Define

$$
W_{P}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1-P & P \\
P & 1-P
\end{array}\right) .
$$

It is immediate that $W_{P} \in \mathcal{U}_{i \sigma_{3}}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}, \Gamma\right)$ and, furthermore, $j_{i \sigma_{3}}\left(W_{P}\right)=(-1)^{\operatorname{dim}(P)}$.

Remark 5.13 As the previous example shows, one can construct canonical transformations on $\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}$ that are non-trivial for any countable lattice $\Lambda$. In particular, taking $\Lambda=\mathbb{Z}^{\nu}$ for any $\nu \geq 1$, we obtain non-trivial indices in any lattice dimension. In contrast, the strong topological phase associated to freefermionic Hamiltonians with even particle-hole symmetry is non-trivial only in certain dimensions [36]. Hence, the above index map is distinct from the strong topological phase.

We can conclude from this discussion that the index map on Bogoliubov transformations is in general a coarser invariant for topological superconductors as it is unable to distinguish dimension in infinite systems. This result is not so surprising since, while the index has a $K$-theoretic interpretation, it does not arise as a pairing with a Dirac element as is the case for strong topological phases [36]. $\diamond$

### 5.5 A $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index on pairs of BdG Hamiltonians

Next the index map $j_{J}: \mathcal{U}_{J}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}, \Gamma\right) \rightarrow \mathbb{Z}_{2}$ is used to write an explicit $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index between a pair of quasifree dynamics with gapped BdG Hamiltonians. The definition works for BdG Hamiltonians over an arbitrary countable set $\Lambda$ and is thus not restricted to dimension 1 . As before, our constructions readily extend to an arbitrary complex Hilbert space $\mathcal{H}$ with real structure $\Gamma$.

Definition 5.14 Let $H_{k}, k=0,1$, be a pair of gapped $B d G$ Hamiltonians on $\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}$ coming from quasifree dynamics on $A_{\mathrm{sd}}^{\mathrm{car}}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}, \Gamma\right)$ and satisfying $0 \notin \sigma\left(H_{k}\right)$. Suppose that the positive energy spectral projections $E_{k}=\chi_{(0, \infty)}\left(H_{k}\right)$ are such that $E_{0}-E_{1}$ is a Hilbert-Schmidt operator. Then index of the pair of gapped BdG Hamiltonians is defined by

$$
j\left(H_{0}, H_{1}\right)=(-1)^{\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{dim} \operatorname{Ker}\left(J_{0}+J_{1}\right)}=(-1)^{\operatorname{dim}\left(E_{0} \wedge\left(1-E_{1}\right)\right)}
$$

where $J_{k}=i H_{k}\left|H_{k}\right|^{-1}$.
Let us note that for $j\left(H_{0}, H_{1}\right)$ to be defined, the ground states $\omega_{E_{0}}$ and $\omega_{E_{1}}$ for $A_{\Lambda}^{\text {car }}$ are unitarily equivalent by Theorem 5.1 (iii). The index $j\left(H_{0}, H_{1}\right)$ is a re-writing of the index on canonical transformations. More precisely, because the orthogonal group acts transitively on the space of complex structures by Lemma 5.4, there exists a $W \in \mathcal{U}_{J_{0}}\left(\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}, \Gamma\right)$ such that $J_{1}=W J_{0} W^{*}$, and then $j\left(H_{0}, H_{1}\right)=j_{J_{0}}(W)$. The index also coincides with the index from [2] which is reproduced in Equation (6.10.9) of [32].

The index map is a homomorphism by Proposition 5.9; so if $j\left(H_{0}, H_{1}\right)$ and $j\left(H_{1}, H_{2}\right)$ are welldefined, then

$$
j\left(H_{0}, H_{2}\right)=j\left(H_{0}, H_{1}\right) j\left(H_{1}, H_{2}\right) .
$$

By Theorem 5.6, the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index encodes whether the restriction of the states $\omega_{E_{k}}$ to the even subalgebra $\left(A_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{car}}\right)^{0}$ give rise to equivalent representations.

### 5.6 Connections to $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow

Let $\beta$ be a quasifree dynamics with BdG Hamiltonian $H$ such that $0 \notin \sigma_{\text {ess }}(H)$. Then $i H$ defines a skew-adjoint Fredholm operator on the real Hilbert space $\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}^{\Gamma}$. Therefore, Fredholm paths $t \in[0,1] \mapsto$ $i H(t)$ of BdG Hamiltonians give paths of skew-adjoint Fredholm operators on $\mathcal{H}_{\mathbb{R}}^{\Gamma}$. For paths with invertible (gapped) endpoints, then one can consider $\mathrm{Sf}_{2}(t \in[0,1] \mapsto i H(t))$.

We now prove an infinite-dimensional analogue of Proposition 3.3.

Proposition 5.15 Let $H_{0}$ and $H_{1}$ be invertible BdG Hamiltonians on $\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}$ with $j\left(H_{0}, H_{1}\right)$ well-defined. Then for any continuous path of self-adjoint Fredholm operators $H_{t}$ connecting $H_{0}$ and $H_{1}$,

$$
j\left(H_{0}, H_{1}\right)=\mathrm{Sf}_{2}\left(t \in[0,1] \mapsto i H_{t}\right) .
$$

Proof. Let $J_{0}=i H_{0}\left|H_{0}\right|^{-1}$ and $J_{1}=i H_{1}\left|H_{1}\right|^{-1}$. As $\left\|J_{0}-J_{1}\right\|_{\mathcal{Q}}=0$, one can take the trivial partition of $[0,1]$ in the definition of the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-spectral flow, and so

$$
\mathrm{Sf}_{2}\left(t \in[0,1] \mapsto i H_{t}\right)=(-1)^{\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{dim} \operatorname{Ker}\left(J_{0}+J_{1}\right)}=j\left(H_{0}, H_{1}\right),
$$

completing the proof.
There is also an infinite-dimensional analogue of Proposition 3.4.
Proposition 5.16 Let $H_{0}$ and $H_{1}$ be invertible BdG Hamiltonians on $\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}$ with $j\left(H_{0}, H_{1}\right)$ well-defined. If $j\left(H_{0}, H_{1}\right)=-1$, then for any continuous path of self-adjoint and particle-hole symmetric Fredholm operators $H(t)$ connecting $H_{0}$ and $H_{1}$, there is some $t_{0} \in(0,1)$ such that $H\left(t_{0}\right)$ has a double degenerate kernel.

Proof. The assumptions ensure that $\mathrm{Sf}_{2}(t \in[0,1] \mapsto i H(t))$ is well-defined and non-trivial. Therefore there is at least one $t_{0} \in(0,1)$ such that $\operatorname{Ker}\left(i H\left(t_{0}\right)\right)=\operatorname{Ker}\left(H\left(t_{0}\right)\right)$ is even-dimensional.

Propositions 5.16 shows that the index on pairs of BdG Hamiltonians precisely encodes the topological obstruction for two BdG Hamiltonians to be in the same topological phase. Let us now consider the relationship between the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index, the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow and gapped ground states on the CAR algebra.

Proposition 5.17 Let $H_{0}$ and $H_{1}$ be invertible BdG Hamiltonians on $\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}$ that give gapped ground states $\omega_{E_{0}}$ and $\omega_{E_{1}}$ on $A_{\Lambda}^{\text {car }}$. Let $H(t)$ be any continuous path of self-adjoint and particle-hole symmetric Fredholm operators connecting $H_{0}$ and $H_{1}$. Suppose $j\left(H_{0}, H_{1}\right)=-1$. Then there exists a $t_{0}<1$ such that the path $\left[0, t_{0}\right) \ni t \mapsto \omega_{E_{t}}$ of ground states of the quasifree dynamics generated by $H(t)$ as in Proposition 5.3 will not be uniformly gapped.

Proof. By Proposition 5.16 there is a smallest $t_{0} \in(0,1)$ such that $0 \in \sigma\left(H\left(t_{0}\right)\right)$. For all $t \in\left[0, t_{0}\right)$, one has has $0 \notin \sigma(H(t))$. Then we obtain a path of ground states $\left[0, t_{0}\right) \ni t \mapsto \omega_{E_{t}}$ with $E_{t}=\chi_{(0, \infty)}(H(t))$ by Proposition 5.3. For every $t \in\left[0, t_{0}\right)$, the GNS space is

$$
\mathfrak{h}_{E_{t}} \cong \bigoplus_{n=0}^{\infty} \bigwedge^{n} E_{t} \mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}, \quad \bigwedge^{0} E_{t} \mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}=\mathbb{C} \Omega_{E_{t}}
$$

and the GNS Hamiltonian $h_{\omega_{t}}$ is the second quantisation of $H(t)$ restricted to anti-symmetric tensors on $E_{t} \mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}$. As the spectral gap of $H(t)$ above 0 goes to 0 as $t \rightarrow t_{0}$, so too will the spectral gap of $h_{\omega_{t}}$. Thus for any $\gamma>0$, one has $\sigma\left(h_{\omega_{t}}\right) \cap(0, \gamma) \neq \emptyset$ for any $t_{0}-t$ sufficiently small.

Let us now elaborate on the example of the Kitaev chain on $\mathbb{Z}$ studied in Section 5.2 to produce an example of a non-trivial spectral flow, again given by a flux insertion as in the case of the closed finite chain studied in Sections 3.7 and 4.3.

Example 5.18 (Flux insertion in infinite Kitaev chain) The Hamiltonian will be a local perturbation of (42). Let us first focus on the topological phase and thus set $\mu=0$, and for sake of
simplicity $w=-1$. The local perturbation is then given by the flux insertion as in Proposition 3.12, but between site 0 and 1 :

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbf{H}_{[a, b]}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(\alpha)= & \sum_{j=a}^{b-1} \delta_{j \neq 0}\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+\mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}+i \mathfrak{a}_{j} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}-i \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}\right) \\
& +\left(e^{i \alpha} \mathfrak{a}_{0}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{1}+e^{-i \alpha} \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{0}+i e^{-i \alpha} \mathfrak{a}_{0} \mathfrak{a}_{1}-i e^{i \alpha} \mathfrak{a}_{1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{0}^{*}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Let us note that inserting a half-flux is implemented by an automorphism of $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$

$$
\gamma_{-}\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}\right)= \begin{cases}\mathfrak{a}_{j}, & j \geq 1 \\ -\mathfrak{a}_{j}, & j \leq 0\end{cases}
$$

namely one has

$$
\mathbf{H}_{[a, b]}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(\pi)=\gamma_{-}\left(\mathbf{H}_{[a, b]}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(0)\right)
$$

The BdG Hamiltonian is now given by $H_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(\alpha)=S_{\alpha}+S_{\alpha}^{*}$ where the translations with inserted flux are

$$
S_{\alpha}=S \otimes \frac{1}{2}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & i \\
i & -1
\end{array}\right)+\nu_{1}\left(\nu_{0}\right)^{*} \otimes \frac{1}{2}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
e^{-i \alpha}-1 & i\left(e^{i \alpha}-1\right) \\
i\left(e^{-i \alpha}-1\right) & -\left(e^{i \alpha}-1\right)
\end{array}\right)
$$

with $\nu_{n}$ the partial isometry onto the site $n \in \mathbb{Z}$. Note that $H_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(\alpha)$ is a finite rank perturbation of (43), which is gapped. Hence the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow of the path $\alpha \in[0, \pi] \mapsto i H_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(\alpha)$ is well-defined. It has been shown by an explicit calculation in [24, Section 10] that it is equal to -1 . By Proposition 5.15 and homotopy invariance of $\mathrm{Sf}_{2}$, one hence has $j\left(H_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(0), H_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(\pi)\right)=-1$.

Now let us consider the topologically trivial phase of the Kitaev chain, namely set $\mu=1$ and $w=\Delta=0$. As the Hamiltonian has no kinetic part now, the flux insertion does not change the Hamiltonian, that is, $H_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(\alpha)=H_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(0)$. In particular, $j\left(H_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(0), H_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(\pi)\right)=1$.

Hence the flux insertion is a test of the topologically non-trivial nature of the ground state. In Section 6, it is shown how this concept extends to systems which are not quasifree.

Remark 5.19 This remark provides further understanding of the GNS-representation spaces along a flux insertion. Let $(\mathcal{H}, \Gamma)$ be a complex Hilbert space with real structure and consider a normcontinuous path of BdG Hamiltonians $H(s)$ such that $0 \notin \sigma(H(s))$ for all $s \in[0,1] \backslash\left\{s_{0}\right\}$. At the point $s_{0} \in(0,1)$ let us assume that the 0-energy eigenspace of $H\left(s_{0}\right)$ is finite dimensional. Hence one has a continuous path of Fredholm BdG Hamiltonians with a gap-closing point at $s_{0}$. We now consider the family of $\mathbb{R}$-actions on $A_{\mathrm{sd}}^{\operatorname{car}}(\mathcal{H}, \Gamma)$ given by

$$
\alpha_{s, t}(\mathfrak{c}(v))=\mathfrak{c}\left(e^{i t H(s)} v\right), \quad t \in \mathbb{R}, \quad s \in[0,1]
$$

Example 5.18 is a special case of the above setting.
Applying Proposition 5.3, outside of the point $s_{0}$, the dynamics $\alpha_{s}$ has a unique pure ground state $\omega_{s}$ constructed by the basis projection $E_{s}=\chi_{(0, \infty)}(H(s))$ with the GNS space $\mathfrak{h}_{\omega_{s}}=\bigoplus_{n} \bigwedge^{n} E_{s} \mathcal{H}$.

At the crossing point $s_{0}$, let $E_{0}=\chi_{\{0\}}\left(H\left(s_{0}\right)\right)$ and $E_{+}=\chi_{(0, \infty)}\left(H\left(s_{0}\right)\right)$. Then one can decompose the CAR algebra $A_{\mathrm{sd}}^{\mathrm{car}}(\mathcal{H}, \Gamma) \simeq A^{\mathrm{car}}\left(E_{0} \mathcal{H}\right) \hat{\otimes} A^{\text {car }}\left(E_{+} \mathcal{H}\right)$ with $A^{\text {car }}\left(E_{0} \mathcal{H}\right)$ finite-dimensional. Given an arbitrary state $\omega_{0}$ on $A^{\text {car }}\left(E_{0} \mathcal{H}\right)$, then by [32, Proposition 6.37]

$$
\omega\left(a_{0} a_{1}\right)=\omega_{0}\left(a_{0}\right) \omega_{E_{+}}\left(a_{1}\right), \quad a_{0} \in A^{\mathrm{car}}\left(E_{0} \mathcal{H}\right), \quad a_{1} \in A^{\mathrm{car}}\left(E_{+} \mathcal{H}\right)
$$

will be a ground state of the dynamics $\alpha_{s_{0}}$. In particular, by the tensor product structure, the GNS triple of this ground state is given by

$$
\left(\pi_{\omega_{s_{0}}}, \mathfrak{h}_{\omega_{s_{0}}}, \Omega_{\omega_{s_{0}}}\right) \cong\left(\pi_{0} \hat{\otimes} \mathbf{1}_{\mathfrak{h}_{E_{+}}}+\mathbf{1}_{\mathfrak{h}_{0}} \hat{\otimes} \pi_{E_{+}}, \mathfrak{h}_{0} \hat{\otimes} \mathfrak{h}_{E_{+}}, \Omega_{0} \hat{\otimes} \Omega_{E_{+}}\right),
$$

with $\left(\pi_{0}, \mathfrak{h}_{0}, \Omega_{0}\right)$ the (unique) GNS triple of the finite dimensional algebra $A^{\text {car }}\left(E_{0} \mathcal{H}\right)$ and state $\omega_{0}$. In particular, as $\mathfrak{h}_{0}$ is finite-dimensional, there is some $N$ such that $\mathfrak{h}_{\omega_{s_{0}}} \cong \mathbb{C}^{N} \hat{\otimes} \mathfrak{h}_{E_{+}}$.

The relative $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index provides a topological obstruction for a pair of quasifree ground states to be connected such that the corresponding infinite GNS Hamiltonian retains a spectral gap above 0. This closely aligns with the heuristic physical picture of a (relative) topological or SPT phase of paritysymmetric gapped ground states in the fermionic setting. The next task is to consider ground states that are not quasifree.

## $6 \quad$ A $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index for pure gapped ground states

In this section, we define a candidate $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label for one-dimensional ground states that are not necessarily quasifree. The constructions rely heavily on the Jordan-Wigner transform and, as such, are restricted to the one-dimensional lattice $\mathbb{Z}$.

The interactions are assumed to be even (parity-preserving), finite range and with the property that for $X \subset \mathbb{Z}$ finite

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{j \in \mathbb{Z}} \sum_{X \ni j} \frac{\|\Phi(X)\|}{|X|}<\infty . \tag{45}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that Equation (45) is satisfied for any finite range Hamiltonian with uniformly bounded $\Phi$, e.g. a translation invariant finite range Hamiltonian. All states on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ considered here are assumed to be parity invariant, $\omega \circ \Theta=\omega$ for $\Theta$. This ensures the existence of a self-adjoint unitary $\Sigma$ on $\mathfrak{h}_{\omega}$ such that $\Sigma \Omega_{\omega}=\Omega_{\omega}$ and a decomposition

$$
\mathfrak{h}_{\omega}=\mathfrak{h}_{\omega}^{0} \oplus \mathfrak{h}_{\omega}^{1}, \quad \mathfrak{h}_{\omega}^{i}=\frac{1}{2}\left(1+(-1)^{i} \Sigma\right) \mathfrak{h}_{\omega}=\overline{\pi_{\omega}\left(\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{car}}\right)^{i}\right) \Omega_{\omega}} .
$$

Interactions satisfying the bound (45) also satisfy a Lieb-Robinson bound and so the automorphism $\beta: \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \operatorname{Aut}\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)$ given by

$$
\beta_{t}(a)=\lim _{N \rightarrow \infty} e^{i t \mathbf{H}_{N}} a e^{-i t \mathbf{H}_{N}}, \quad \mathbf{H}_{N}=\sum_{X \subset[-N, N] \cap \mathbb{Z}} \Phi(X)
$$

exists for any $t \in \mathbb{R}\left[54\right.$, Theorem 3.5]. In this section, ground states on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ will always be with respect to this dynamics.

### 6.1 The Jordan-Wigner transform

In order to apply techniques from spin-chains to fermionic systems, one needs to clearly understand the way to pass between the two in the infinite volume limit. This will be established by the JordanWigner transform, so we now restrict to the one-dimensional lattice $\Lambda=\mathbb{Z}$. The basic references here are [18, Example 6.2.14] and [32, Chapter 6.5].

For one-dimensional fermionic interactions that are even, there are three $C^{*}$-algebras of interest in the infinite volume limit: the fermion algebra $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}=\underline{\longrightarrow} \lim _{[-a, b] \cap \mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$, the Pauli algebra $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}=\bigotimes_{\mathbb{Z}} M_{2}(\mathbb{C})$ given by the $C^{*}$-algebraic closure of the tensor algebra generated by the spin matrices at each site, and a crossed product algebra $\widehat{A}_{\mathbb{Z}}=A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }} \rtimes_{\gamma_{-}} \mathbb{Z}_{2}$, where the (outer) action of $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$ is

$$
\gamma_{-}\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}\right)=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
\mathfrak{a}_{j}, & j \geq 1,  \tag{46}\\
-\mathfrak{a}_{j}, & j \leq 0
\end{array} .\right.
$$

One can abstractly characterise $\widehat{A}_{\mathbb{Z}}$ as the $C^{*}$-algebra generated by $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ and the self-adjoint unitary $T$ such that $T a=\gamma_{-}(a) T$ for any $a \in A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$. The grading $\Theta$ of $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ extends to a grading on $\widehat{A}_{\mathbb{Z}}$ by defining $\Theta(T)=T$.

There is a $*$-embedding of the Pauli algebra $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}$ in $\widehat{A}_{\mathbb{Z}}$ by the map

$$
\sigma_{j}^{x} \mapsto T S_{j}\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}+\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}\right), \quad \sigma_{j}^{y} \mapsto i T S_{j}\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}-\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}\right), \quad \sigma_{j}^{z} \mapsto 2 \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}-\mathbf{1},
$$

where

$$
S_{j}=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
\prod_{i=1}^{j-1} \sigma_{i}^{z}, & j \geq 1 \\
\mathbf{1}, & j=1 \\
\prod_{i=j}^{0} \sigma_{i}^{z}, & j \leq 0
\end{array} .\right.
$$

Thus, both $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ and the Pauli algebra $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}$ can be embedded within a larger algebra $\widehat{A}_{\mathbb{Z}}$.
To better compare $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ and $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}$ embedded within $\widehat{A}_{\mathbb{Z}}$, let us give the Pauli algebra a grading, where at each site $j \in \mathbb{Z}, \sigma_{j}^{z}$ is even and $\sigma_{j}^{x}, \sigma_{j}^{y}$ are odd. This gives a decomposition $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}=\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}\right)^{0} \oplus\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}\right)^{1}$ and ensures that the embedding $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P} \hookrightarrow \widehat{A}_{\mathbb{Z}}$ is graded. Using the decomposition of $\widehat{A}_{\mathbb{Z}}$,

$$
\widehat{A}_{\mathbb{Z}} \cong\left(\widehat{A}_{\mathbb{Z}}\right)^{0} \oplus\left(\widehat{A}_{\mathbb{Z}}\right)^{1} \cong\left(\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0} \oplus T\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}\right) \oplus\left(\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{1} \oplus T\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{1}\right),
$$

one then has the following equivalences of algebras and vector spaces respectively,

$$
\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}\right)^{0} \cong\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{car}}\right)^{0}, \quad\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}\right)^{1} \cong T\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{car}}\right)^{1}
$$

Lastly, let us note that, for half-infinite systems where $\Lambda=\mathbb{N}$, the automorphism $\gamma_{-}$on $A_{\mathbb{N}}^{\text {car }}$ is the identity automorphism and one can naturally identify $\widehat{A}_{\mathbb{N}} \cong A_{\mathbb{N}}^{\text {car }} \cong A_{\mathbb{N}}^{P}$ as graded algebras, where $A_{\mathbb{N}}^{P}=\bigotimes_{\mathbb{N}} M_{2}(\mathbb{C})$.

## States under the Jordan-Wigner transform

Having analyzed the connections between $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ and $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}$, let us now discuss links between states on these algebras. Any $\Theta$-invariant state $\omega$ on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ has a restriction $\left.\omega\right|_{\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}} \text { car }\right)^{0}}$. If $\omega$ is pure, then this restriction is pure as well [32, Lemma 6.23]. One can extend $\omega$ to a state $\hat{\omega}$ on $\widehat{A}_{\mathbb{Z}}$ by setting $\hat{\omega}\left(a_{0}+T a_{1}\right)=\omega\left(a_{0}\right)$ where $a_{0}, a_{1} \in A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$. This provides a state $\omega^{P}$ on the Pauli algebra $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P} \subset \widehat{A}_{\mathbb{Z}}$ as the restriction of $\hat{\omega}$. Because $\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0} \cong\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}\right)^{0}$, the state $\left.\omega^{P}\right|_{\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}\right)^{0}}$ of $\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}\right)^{0}$ is pure if $\omega$ is so, but $\omega^{P}$ itself need not be pure.

Theorem 6.1 ([32], Theorem 6.25) Let $\omega$ be a pure $\Theta$-invariant state on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$. Then $\omega^{P}$, the restriction of $\hat{\omega}$ to $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}$, is not pure if and only if the following two conditions hold:
(i) $\omega$ and $\omega \circ \gamma_{-}$are equivalent states on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{car}}$,
(ii) $\left.\omega\right|_{\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}}$ and $\left.\omega\right|_{\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}} \text { car }\right)^{0}} \circ \gamma_{-}$are not equivalent states on $\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}$.

If $\omega^{P}$ is not pure, then it is a mixture of 2 inequivalent pure states.
Let us now specialise Theorem 6.1 to a quasifree pure $\Theta$-invariant state. Let $E$ be a basis projection on $\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}=\ell^{2}(\mathbb{Z}) \otimes \mathbb{C}^{2}$. Then the quasifree state $\omega_{E}$ on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ is pure and $\Theta$-invariant. To know if $\omega_{E}^{P}$ is pure or not, by Theorem 6.1 , we need to compare the states $\omega_{E}$ and $\omega_{E} \circ \gamma_{-}$on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ and $\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}$ with the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-action $\gamma_{-}$from Equation (46). For this purpose it is useful to introduce the operator

$$
\theta_{-}: \ell^{2}(\mathbb{Z}) \rightarrow \ell^{2}(\mathbb{Z}), \quad \theta_{-} e_{j}= \begin{cases}e_{j}, & j \geq 1  \tag{47}\\ -e_{j}, & j \leq 0\end{cases}
$$

with $\left\{e_{j}\right\}_{j \in \mathbb{Z}}$ the canonical basis of $\ell^{2}(\mathbb{Z})$. We also denote by $\theta_{-}$the diagonal extension $\theta_{-} \otimes \mathbf{1}_{\mathbb{C}^{2}}$ to $\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}$. Then $\theta_{-} E \theta_{-}$is a basis projection and

$$
\omega_{\theta_{-} E \theta_{-}}(a)=\omega_{E} \circ \gamma_{-}(a), \quad a \in A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}
$$

By Theorem 5.6, the restrictions of $\omega_{E}$ and $\omega_{E} \circ \gamma_{-}$give equivalent representations of $\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}$ if and only if $E-\theta_{-} E \theta_{-}$is Hilbert-Schmidt and $\operatorname{dim}\left(\theta_{-} E \theta_{-} \wedge(1-E)\right)$ is even. On the other hand, by the last item of Theorem 5.1, $E-\theta_{-} E \theta_{-}$is Hilbert-Schmidt if and only if $\omega_{E}$ and $\omega_{E} \circ \gamma_{-}$are equivalent. Therefore one concludes from Theorem 6.1:

Corollary 6.2 Let $E$ be a basis projection and $\omega_{E}$ be the corresponding pure, $\Theta$-invariant and quasifree state on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{car}}$. If $\omega_{E}$ is equivalent to $\omega_{E} \circ \gamma_{-}$, then for $J=i(2 E-1)$ :

$$
\omega_{E}^{P} \text { pure } \Longleftrightarrow \operatorname{dim}\left(\theta_{-} E \theta_{-} \wedge(1-E)\right) \text { even } \Longleftrightarrow j_{J}\left(\theta_{-}\right)=1
$$

with $j_{J}$ the index map on canonical transformations from Proposition 5.9.

### 6.2 Ground states of the $X Y$-Hamiltonian

This section gives a detailed review of results on the ground states of the $X Y$-Hamiltonian on the lattice $\mathbb{Z}$, based on the work of Araki and Matsui [3] which is also described in detail in [32, Chapter $6-7]$. The $X Y$-Hamiltonian reduces to the Kitaev chain and quantum Ising model for special values of the input parameters, and the exposition motivates how we deal with more general fermionic chains in Section 6.3 and 6.4. While the $X Y$-Hamiltonian is typically defined on the Pauli algebra $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}$, we will work on the larger algebra $\widehat{A}_{\mathbb{Z}}$, where one can pass between fermionic and spin-chain descriptions without issue.

The Hamiltonian, written using the fermion operators, is defined on the local region $[a, b] \cap \mathbb{Z}$ as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{H}_{[a, b]}^{X Y}=\sum_{j=a}^{b-1}\left[-\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+\mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}\right)+\rho\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j} \mathfrak{a}_{j+1}+\mathfrak{a}_{j+1}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}\right)\right]+\mu \sum_{j=a}^{b}\left(\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*} \mathfrak{a}_{j}-\frac{1}{2} \mathbf{1}\right) . \tag{48}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $\rho, \mu \in \mathbb{R}$. Note that we use a different scaling of the parameters to [3] in order to better align with the rest of the paper. The Hamiltonian $\mathbf{H}_{[a, b]}^{X Y}$ conserves parity and can be written in terms of the Pauli operators:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{H}_{[a, b]}^{X Y}=\sum_{j=a}^{b-1}\left[(1+\rho) \sigma_{j}^{x} \sigma_{j+1}^{x}+(1-\rho) \sigma_{j}^{y} \sigma_{j+1}^{y}\right]+\mu \sum_{j=a}^{b} \sigma_{j}^{z} . \tag{49}
\end{equation*}
$$

Comparing with (15) shows that $\mathbf{H}_{[a, b]}^{X Y}$ with $\rho=1$ recovers the Kitaev with $w=\Delta=1$. For the parameters $(\mu, \rho)=(0, \pm 1)$, the $X Y$-Hamiltonian reduces to the quantum Ising chain.

The $X Y$-Hamiltonian gives the BdG Hamiltonian on $\mathcal{H}_{\mathrm{ph}}=\ell^{2}(\mathbb{Z}) \otimes \mathbb{C}^{2}$,

$$
H_{\mathbb{Z}}^{X Y}=-2\left(\begin{array}{cc}
S+S^{*}-\mu & \rho\left(S-S^{*}\right) \\
-\rho\left(S-S^{*}\right) & -\left(S+S^{*}-\mu\right)
\end{array}\right)
$$

with $S$ the bilateral shift operator. One can check using the Fourier transform that for $\mu=0$ and $\rho \neq 0, \pm 1, \sigma\left(H_{\mathbb{Z}}^{X Y}\right)=[-2,-2 \rho] \cup[2 \rho, 2]$ or $[-2 \rho, 2] \cup[2,2 \rho]$ with constant multiplicity 4. If $(\mu, \rho)=(0,1)$, then $\sigma\left(H_{\mathbb{Z}}^{X Y}\right)=\{ \pm 4\}$. We also note that if $(\mu, \rho) \neq(0, \pm 1)$, then the point spectrum $\sigma_{p}\left(H_{\mathbb{Z}}^{X Y}\right)=\emptyset[3]$. In particular, for $(\mu, \rho)$ such that $0 \notin \sigma\left(H_{\mathbb{Z}}^{X Y}\right)$, Proposition 5.3 applies and says that for $E=\chi_{(0, \infty)}\left(H_{\mathbb{Z}}^{X Y}\right), \omega_{E}$ is the unique ground state on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$, the representation $\pi_{E}$ is irreducible and the infinite GNS Hamiltonian is also gapped.

Let us also consider the ground states on the even subalgebra $\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}$, where Theorem 5.7 applies. Specifically, in the case of $(\mu, \rho) \neq(0, \pm 1)$, the restriction of $\omega_{E}$ to $\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}$ is the unique ground state. If $(\mu, \rho)=(0, \pm 1)$, then $\sigma\left(H_{\mathbb{Z}}^{X Y}\right)=\{ \pm 4\}$ and each eigenvalue has infinite multiplicity. If $\left\{\nu_{j}\right\}_{j \in \mathbb{Z}}$ are mutually orthogonal eigenvectors of +4 , they each give basis projections $E-P_{\nu_{j}}+\Gamma P_{\nu_{j}} \Gamma$ with $P_{\nu_{j}}(v)=\left\langle\frac{\nu_{j}}{\left\|\nu_{j}\right\|}, v\right\rangle \frac{\nu_{j}}{\left\|\nu_{j}\right\|}$. Therefore an arbitrary ground state of $\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}$ is a convex combination of the restrictions of $\omega_{E}$ and $\omega_{\nu_{j}}$. The GNS representations associated to $\omega_{\nu_{j}}$ are all equivalent. Hence, if ground states are counted up to equivalence of GNS representations, then $\mathbf{H}^{X Y}$ has two distinct ground states for $(\mu, \rho)=(0, \pm 1)$.

We have so far shown that the number of ground states of the even subalgebra $\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}$ in the infinite volume limit depends on the parameters $(\mu, \rho)$ in the $X Y$-Hamiltonian. In particular, the case $(\mu, \rho)=(0,1)$ which has 2 distinct ground states coincides with the infinite Kitaev chain with $w=\Delta=1$. However, at the level of ground states of $\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}$ in the region $(\mu, \rho) \neq(0, \pm 1)$, we currently cannot distinguish between what is considered the trivial region, $|\mu| \geq \frac{1}{2}$ or $\rho=0$ and $|\mu|<\frac{1}{2}$, with the non-trivial region $|\mu|<\frac{1}{2}$ and $\rho \neq 0$. These regions can be distinguished by looking at ground states of the Pauli algebra $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}$.

Suppose $0 \notin \sigma\left(H_{\mathbb{Z}}^{X Y}\right)$ and let $\omega$ be the pure ground state of the $X Y$-chain on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$. As previously explained, one obtains a state $\omega^{P}$ on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}$ by extending $\omega$ to $\widehat{A}_{\mathbb{Z}}$ and then restricting to $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}$. Theorem 6.4 below analyses the purity of $\omega^{P}$ based on Corollary 6.2 and the following:

Proposition 6.3 ([3], Lemma 4.5) Recall that $(\mu, \rho)$ are the parameters in $\mathbf{H}^{X Y}$.
(i) If either $|\mu|=\frac{1}{2}$ or $|\mu|<\frac{1}{2}$ and $\rho=0$, then $E-\theta_{-} E \theta_{-}$is not Hilbert-Schmidt.
(ii) If either $|\mu|>\frac{1}{2}$ or $(\mu, \rho)=(0, \pm 1)$, then $E-\theta_{-} E \theta_{-}$is Hilbert-Schmidt and $\operatorname{dim}\left(\theta_{-} E \theta_{-} \wedge(1-E)\right)$ is even.
(iii) If $|\mu|<\frac{1}{2}$ and $\rho \neq 0$, then $E-\theta_{-} E \theta_{-}$is Hilbert-Schmidt and $\operatorname{dim}\left(\theta_{-} E \theta_{-} \wedge(1-E)\right)$ is odd.

Theorem 6.4 ([18], Example 6.2.56; [3], Theorem 1) The number of extremal (and thus pure) ground states of the XY-Hamiltonian on the Pauli algebra $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}$ is as follows
(i) 1 if $|\mu| \geq \frac{1}{2}$ or if $|\mu|<\frac{1}{2}$ and $\rho=0$,
(ii) 2 if $|\mu|<\frac{1}{2}, \rho \neq 0$ and $(\mu, \rho) \neq(0, \pm 1)$. The grading automorphism $\Theta$ on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}$ maps between these ground states.
(iii) $\infty$ if $(\mu, \rho)=(0, \pm 1)$.

In the quantum Ising region $(\mu, \rho)=(0, \pm 1)$, there are 4 ground states up to unitary equivalence. Namely, for $\nu_{j}$ any +4 -eigenvector of $H_{\mathbb{Z}}^{X Y}$, the states $\omega_{E}$ and $\omega_{\nu_{i}}$ both split into a sum of two extremal ground states $\omega_{E}^{j}$ and $\omega_{\nu_{i}}^{j}, j \in\{0,1\}$ such that $\omega_{E}^{0} \circ \Theta=\omega_{E}^{1}$ and $\omega_{\nu_{j}}^{0} \circ \Theta=\omega_{\nu_{j}}^{1}$ with $\Theta$ the grading on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}$.

To summarise our discussion, one obtains a richer characterisation of the ground states of the infinite $X Y$-chain by considering both $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ and the Pauli algebra $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}$ (or, equivalently, studying the states $\omega$ and $\omega \circ \gamma_{-}$restricted to the even subalgebra $\left.\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}\right)$.

### 6.3 The split property

The split property has its roots in algebraic quantum field theory [31] but was adapted to fermion and spin chains by Matsui [47, 48]. More recently, the application of the split property to the analytic approach to SPT phases has been developed by Ogata et al. [57, 58, 60]. A long range version of [57] is given by Moon [51]. Given a subset $\Lambda \subset \mathbb{Z}$ with complement $\Lambda^{c}=\mathbb{Z} \backslash \Lambda$ and a $\Theta$-invariant state $\omega$, one introduces the product state of the restrictions by

$$
\omega_{\Lambda} \otimes_{F} \omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\left(A_{1} A_{2}\right)=\omega_{\Lambda}\left(A_{1}\right) \omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\left(A_{2}\right), \quad A_{1} \in A_{\Lambda}^{\mathrm{car}}, A_{2} \in A_{\Lambda^{c}}^{\mathrm{car}}, A_{1} A_{2} \in A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{car}} .
$$

To briefly indicate why $\omega_{\Lambda} \otimes_{F} \omega_{\Lambda^{c}}$ is a state, first note that for $A_{1} \in A_{\Lambda}^{\text {car }}, A_{2} \in A_{\Lambda^{c}}^{\text {car }}$ and $A_{1} A_{2} \in A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$, one always has that $A_{2}^{*} A_{1}^{*} A_{1} A_{2}=A_{1}^{*} A_{1} A_{2}^{*} A_{2}$ and so

$$
\omega_{\Lambda} \otimes_{F} \omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\left(\left(A_{1} A_{2}\right)^{*} A_{1} A_{2}\right)=\omega_{\Lambda} \otimes_{F} \omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\left(A_{1}^{*} A_{1} A_{2}^{*} A_{2}\right)=\omega_{\Lambda}\left(A_{1}^{*} A_{1}\right) \omega_{\Lambda^{c}}\left(A_{2}^{*} A_{2}\right),
$$

which will be positive as $\omega_{\Lambda}$ and $\omega_{\Lambda^{c}}$ are states.
We will mainly use $\Lambda=\mathbb{N}$ and then denote $\omega_{R}=\omega_{\mathbb{N}}$ and $\omega_{L}=\omega_{\mathbb{N}^{c}}$. These are states on $A_{L}^{\text {car }}=A_{(-\infty, 0] \cap \mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ and $A_{R}^{\text {car }}=A_{[1, \infty) \cap \mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}=A_{\mathbb{N}}^{\text {car }}$. Recall that 2 states $\omega_{0}, \omega_{1}$ on a $C^{*}$-algebra $A$ are quasiequivalent if there is an isomorphism $\rho: \pi_{\omega_{0}}(A)^{\prime \prime} \rightarrow \pi_{\omega_{1}}(A)^{\prime \prime}$ with $\rho \circ \pi_{\omega_{0}}(a)=\pi_{\omega_{1}}(a)$ for all $a \in A$ [17, Section 2.4.4]. Pure states are either disjoint or unitarily equivalent [29], so if two pure states are quasiequivalent they are necessarily unitarily equivalent.

Definition 6.5 $A \Theta$-invariant state $\omega$ on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ satisfies the split property if $\omega$ is quasiequivalent to $\omega_{L} \otimes_{F} \omega_{R}$.

The following proposition is stated in [48, page 6] without proof. We provide a proof based on [47, Proposition 2.2].

Proposition 6.6 Let $\omega$ be a pure $\Theta$-invariant state on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$. Then $\omega$ satisfies the split property if and only if $\pi_{\omega}\left(A_{L}^{\text {car }}\right)^{\prime \prime}$ and $\pi_{\omega}\left(A_{R}^{\text {car }}\right)^{\prime \prime}$ are type I von Neumann algebras.

Proof. Suppose that $\omega$ is pure, $\Theta$-invariant and quasiequivalent to $\omega_{L} \otimes_{F} \omega_{R}$. Then the restrictions $\omega_{L}$ and $\omega_{R}$ are also $\Theta$-invariant. Therefore $\omega_{L} \otimes_{F} \omega_{R}\left(a_{L} a_{R}\right)=\omega_{L}\left(a_{L}^{0}\right) \omega_{R}\left(a_{R}^{0}\right)$ as any odd part of $a_{L}$ and $a_{R}$ will vanish. Therefore there is an ungraded tensor decomposition $\omega \sim_{q e} \omega_{L} \otimes \omega_{R}$ and because
$\omega$ is pure, it is type I. Therefore $\omega_{L}$ and $\omega_{R}$ must also be type I as a non type I tensor product cannot be type I.

Now suppose that $\pi_{\omega}\left(A_{R}^{\text {car }}\right)^{\prime \prime}$ is type I. Let $\mathfrak{h}_{R}=\overline{\pi_{\omega}\left(A_{R}^{\text {car }}\right) \Omega_{\omega}}$ and $\pi_{R}\left(A_{R}^{\text {car }}\right)$ the restriction of $\pi_{\omega}\left(A_{R}^{\text {car }}\right)$ to $\mathfrak{h}_{R}$. Because $\pi_{\omega}\left(A_{R}^{\text {car }}\right)^{\prime \prime}$ is a type I factor, the center of $\pi_{\omega}\left(A_{R}^{\text {car }}\right)^{\prime \prime}$ is trivial and any subrepresentation of $\pi_{\omega}\left(A_{R}^{\text {car }}\right)$ is quasiequivalent to $\pi_{\omega}\left(A_{R}^{\text {car }}\right)$ itself. This implies that $\pi_{\omega}\left(A_{R}^{\text {car }}\right)$ and $\pi_{R}\left(A_{R}^{\mathrm{car}}\right)$ are quasiequivalent and, hence, $\pi_{R}\left(A_{R}^{\mathrm{car}}\right)^{\prime \prime}$ is a type I factor.

Next, recall [65, Chapter V, Theorem 1.31], where given a type I factor $M$ on a separable Hilbert space $\mathcal{H}_{0}$ with commutant $M^{\prime}$, there are separable Hilbert spaces $\mathcal{H}_{1}$ and $\mathcal{H}_{2}$ with a unitary $W: \mathcal{H}_{0} \rightarrow$ $\mathcal{H}_{1} \otimes \mathcal{H}_{2}$ such that

$$
W M W^{-1}=\mathcal{B}\left(\mathcal{H}_{1}\right) \otimes \mathbf{1}_{\mathcal{H}_{2}}, \quad W M^{\prime} W^{-1}=\mathbf{1}_{\mathcal{H}_{1}} \otimes \mathcal{B}\left(\mathcal{H}_{2}\right)
$$

Using this result, the state $\omega$ of $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ is equivalent to a state $\phi_{L} \otimes \phi_{R}$. Because $\omega$ is $\Theta$-invariant, so are $\phi_{L}$ and $\phi_{R}$, and so $\phi_{L}$ and $\phi_{R}$ are quasiequivalent to $\omega_{L}$ and $\omega_{R}$ respectively. Hence $\omega$ is quasiequivalent to $\omega_{L} \otimes_{F} \omega_{R}$.

For spin systems, a factor state on the left and right chains imply a locality property of $\omega$ away from the boundary, [17, Corollary 2.6.11] or [47, Proposition 2.1].

There are many one-dimensional models whose ground states do not satisfy the split property. For example, adapting the results in [67, Section 16] to our setting, the ground state of the $X Y$ Hamiltonian from Equation (48) with parameters $(\mu, \rho)=(0,0)$ generates a type $\mathrm{II}_{1}$-representation. However, there is an important connection between gapped ground states and the split property in one-dimensional systems.

Theorem 6.7 (Corollary 1.9 in [48]) Let $\mathbf{H}$ be a one-dimensional $\Theta$-invariant finite range Hamiltonian

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{H}=\sum_{j \in \mathbb{Z}} \Phi_{j}, \quad \Phi_{j} \in A_{[j-r, j+r] \cap \mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{car}}, \quad \Theta\left(\Phi_{j}\right)=\Phi_{j}, \quad\left\|\Phi_{j}\right\| \leq C \tag{50}
\end{equation*}
$$

and satisfying the bound (45). If $\omega$ is a gapped ground state of $H$, then $\pi_{\omega}\left(A_{L}^{\text {car }}\right)^{\prime \prime}$ and $\pi_{\omega}\left(A_{R}^{\text {car }}\right)^{\prime \prime}$ are type I von Neumann algebras. In particular, if $\omega$ is pure, then it satisfies the split property.

The relationship between the split property and gapped ground states is a one-dimensional phenomena and the proof of Theorem 6.7 relies on the Jordan-Wigner transform and the area law for the decay of entanglement entropy in spin chains. Results in higher dimensional spin systems have been considered using a weaker notion of the split property, see [26].

### 6.4 The $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label

The next aim is to distinguish different gapped ground states of fermionic Hamiltonians, ideally via a topological phase label. To this end, we again utilize the following decomposition obtained from the Jordan-Wigner transform, see Section 6.1:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{A}_{\mathbb{Z}}=A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{car}} \rtimes_{\gamma_{-}} \mathbb{Z}_{2} \cong A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{car}} \oplus T A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{car}}, \quad A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P} \cong\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}\right)^{0} \oplus\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}\right)^{1} \cong\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{car}}\right)^{0} \oplus T\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{car}}\right)^{1} \tag{51}
\end{equation*}
$$

Here $\gamma_{-}$is the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-action from Equation (46). One can extend any state $\omega$ on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ to a state on $\widehat{A}_{\mathbb{Z}}$ and then restrict to a state $\omega^{P}$ on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}$. If one starts with a $\Theta$-invariant and pure state on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$, by Theorem 6.1 the purity of $\omega^{P}$ depends on the representations of $\omega$ and $\omega \circ \gamma_{-}$on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ and $\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}$.

In the quasifree case, this obstruction can be expressed in terms of a Hilbert-Schmidt condition and a $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index on canonical transformations. Let us now consider this question for more general states. The next results do not need $\omega$ to be a ground state.

Lemma 6.8 Let $\omega$ be a $\Theta$-invariant state on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ that satisfies the split property. Then $\omega$ is quasiequivalent to $\omega \circ \gamma_{-}$.

Proof. If $\omega$ is $\Theta$-invariant then so are the restrictions $\omega_{L}$ and $\omega_{R}$ to the subalgebras $A_{L}^{\text {car }}$ and $A_{R}^{\text {car }}$. Furthermore, we observe that

$$
\gamma-\left.\right|_{A_{L}^{\mathrm{car}}}=\left.\Theta\right|_{A_{L}^{\mathrm{car}}}, \quad \quad \gamma-\left.\right|_{A_{R}^{\mathrm{car}}}=\operatorname{Id}_{A_{R}^{\mathrm{car}}}
$$

and so

$$
\omega_{L} \otimes_{F} \omega_{R}\left(\gamma_{-}\left(a_{L} a_{R}\right)\right)=\omega_{L}\left(\gamma_{-}\left(a_{L}\right)\right) \omega_{R}\left(\gamma_{-}\left(a_{R}\right)\right)=\omega_{L}\left(\Theta\left(a_{L}\right)\right) \omega_{R}\left(a_{R}\right)=\omega_{L}\left(a_{L}\right) \omega_{R}\left(a_{R}\right)
$$

That is, $\omega_{L} \otimes_{F} \omega_{R} \circ \gamma_{-}=\omega_{L} \otimes_{F} \omega_{R}$. Therefore by Corollary 2.3 .17 of [17], there is a unitary $W \in \mathcal{B}\left(\mathfrak{h}_{\omega_{L} \otimes_{F} \omega_{R}}\right)$ such that $W \Omega_{\omega_{L} \otimes_{F} \omega_{R}}=\Omega_{\omega_{L} \otimes_{F} \omega_{R}}$ and $W \pi_{\omega_{L} \otimes_{F} \omega_{R}}(a) W^{*}=\pi_{\omega_{L} \otimes_{F} \omega_{R}}\left(\gamma_{-}(a)\right)$.

Because $\omega_{L} \otimes_{F} \omega_{R}$ is quasiequivalent to $\omega$, there is an isomorphism $\varphi: \pi_{\omega_{L} \otimes_{F} \omega_{R}}\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{\prime \prime} \rightarrow \pi_{\omega}\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{\prime \prime}$ such that $\varphi\left(\pi_{\omega_{L} \otimes_{F} \omega_{R}}(a)\right)=\pi_{\omega}(a)$ for all $a \in A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$. Let us now consider the map $\varphi \circ \mathrm{Ad}_{W}$ which has the property that

$$
\varphi\left(W \pi_{\omega_{L} \otimes_{F} \omega_{R}}(a) W^{*}\right)=\varphi\left(\pi_{\omega_{L} \otimes_{F} \omega_{R}}\left(\gamma_{-}(a)\right)\right)=\pi_{\omega}\left(\gamma_{-}(a)\right)=\pi_{\omega \circ \gamma_{-}}(a), \quad a \in A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{car}}
$$

Hence $\varphi \circ \operatorname{Ad}_{W}$ gives an isomorphism $\pi_{\omega_{L} \otimes_{F} \omega_{R}}\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{\prime \prime} \cong \pi_{\omega \circ \gamma_{-}}\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{\prime \prime}$ that implements a quasiequivalence between $\omega_{L} \otimes_{F} \omega_{R}$ and $\omega \circ \gamma_{-}$. Because quasiequivalence is transitive, $\omega$ is quasiequivalent to $\omega \circ \gamma_{-}$.

Let us now assume that $\omega$ is pure and $\Theta$-invariant. In particular, $\pi_{\omega}\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{\prime \prime}=\mathcal{B}\left(\mathfrak{h}_{\omega}\right)$ and the GNS space is graded by a self-adjoint unitary $\Sigma$. If, moreover, $\omega$ is equivalent to $\omega \circ \gamma_{-}$, there exists a unitary $V \in \mathcal{B}\left(\mathfrak{h}_{\omega}\right)$ such that $\pi_{\omega}\left(\gamma_{-}(a)\right)=V \pi_{\omega}(a) V^{*}$. It turns out that this unitary can be either even or odd.

Proposition 6.9 Let $\omega$ be a pure $\Theta$-invariant state on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{car}}$ equivalent to $\omega \circ \gamma_{-}$.
(i) The states $\left.\omega\right|_{\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}}$ and $\left.\omega\right|_{\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}} \circ \gamma_{-}$are equivalent (that is, $\omega^{P}$ is pure) if and only if there is a self-adjoint unitary $V_{0} \in \pi_{\omega}\left(\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}\right)^{\prime \prime}$ such that $\pi_{\omega}\left(\gamma_{-}(a)\right)=V_{0} \pi_{\omega}(a) V_{0}^{*}$ for all $a \in A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$.
(ii) If $\left.\omega\right|_{\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}}$ and $\left.\omega\right|_{\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}} \circ \gamma_{-}$are not equivalent (that is, $\omega^{P}$ is not pure), then there exists a unitary $V_{1} \in \pi_{\omega}\left(\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{1}\right)^{\prime \prime}$ such that $\pi_{\omega}\left(\gamma_{-}(a)\right)=V_{1} \pi_{\omega}(a) V_{1}^{*}$ for all $a \in A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$. Furthermore, $\omega^{P}$ is a mixture of two inequivalent pure states.

We note that there is a large overlap between the above proposition and [48, Proposition 6.3].
Proof. (i) Given the state $\omega$, one can identify the GNS space $\mathfrak{h}_{\left.\omega\right|_{\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}} \text { car }\right)^{0}}}$ of its restriction to the even algebra with $\mathfrak{h}_{\omega}^{0}=\overline{\pi_{\omega}\left(\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}\right) \Omega_{\omega}} \cong \frac{1}{2}(1+\Sigma) \mathfrak{h}_{\omega}$. Because $\omega$ is $\Theta$-invariant and pure, $\left.\omega\right|_{\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}}$ is pure $[32$, Lemma 6.23]. In particular, the states $\left.\omega\right|_{\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}}$ and $\left.\omega\right|_{\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0} \circ} \circ \gamma_{-}$on $\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}$ will be equivalent if and only if there is a self-adjoint unitary $V=V_{0} \in \pi_{\omega}\left(\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}\right)^{\prime \prime}$ implementing $\gamma_{-}$on $\mathfrak{h}_{\omega}^{0}$, i.e. $\Sigma V \Sigma=V$.

For part (ii), let us fix some $j \in \mathbb{N}$ and set $Z_{j}=\mathfrak{a}_{j}+\mathfrak{a}_{j}^{*}$ which is an odd self-adjoint unitary in $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$. By [32, Lemma 6.27] (applied with $U=Z_{j}$ and $\beta=\gamma_{-}$), the pure state $\left.\omega\right|_{\left.\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}{ }^{\text {car }}\right)^{0} \text { on }\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}\right)}$ is equivalent to $\left.\omega\right|_{\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}} \circ \gamma_{-} \circ \operatorname{Ad}_{Z_{j}}$. Therefore there is some $\tilde{W} \in \pi_{\omega}\left(\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}\right)^{\prime \prime}$ such that $\operatorname{Ad}_{\tilde{W}}$ implements $\gamma_{-} \circ \operatorname{Ad}_{Z_{j}}$ on $\mathfrak{h}_{\omega}^{0} \cong \frac{1}{2}(1+\Sigma) \mathfrak{h}_{\omega}$. Because $\left(\gamma_{-} \circ \operatorname{Ad}_{Z_{j}}\right)^{2}=I d$, for an appropriate phase we can take $W=e^{i \phi} \tilde{W}$ self-adjoint with $\operatorname{Ad}_{W}$ implementing $\gamma_{-} \circ \operatorname{Ad}_{Z_{j}}$ on the GNS space. We then compute that

$$
\pi_{\omega}\left(Z_{j}\right) W \pi_{\omega}(a) W \pi_{\omega}\left(Z_{j}\right)=\pi_{\omega}\left(\operatorname{Ad}_{Z_{j}} \circ \gamma_{-} \circ \operatorname{Ad}_{Z_{j}}(a)\right)=\pi_{\omega}\left(\gamma_{-}(a)\right), \quad a \in\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{0}
$$

Once again, because $\gamma_{-}^{2}=\mathrm{Id}$, the operator $\pi_{\omega}\left(Z_{j}\right) W$ is self-adjoint up to a phase. In particular, $\pi_{\omega}\left(Z_{j}\right) W=e^{i \nu} W \pi_{\omega}\left(Z_{j}\right)$ for some $\nu$.

We now consider odd elements, where we compute that, for $a_{1} \in\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{1}$,

$$
\begin{align*}
\pi_{\omega}\left(Z_{j}\right) W \pi_{\omega}\left(a_{1}\right) W \pi_{\omega}\left(Z_{j}\right) & =e^{i \nu} W \pi_{\omega}\left(Z_{j} a_{1}\right) W \pi_{\omega}\left(Z_{j}\right)=e^{i \nu} \pi_{\omega}\left(\gamma_{-} \circ \operatorname{Ad}_{Z_{j}}\left(Z_{j} a_{1}\right)\right) \pi_{\omega}\left(Z_{j}\right) \\
& =e^{i \nu} \pi_{\omega}\left(\gamma_{-}\left(a_{1}\right) Z_{j}\right) \pi_{\omega}\left(Z_{j}\right)=e^{i \nu} \pi_{\omega}\left(\gamma_{-}\left(a_{1}\right)\right), \tag{52}
\end{align*}
$$

where we have used that $Z_{j} a_{1}$ is even and our results on even elements. Because Equation (52) is true for all odd elements, we have that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\pi_{\omega}\left(Z_{j}\right) W \pi_{\omega}\left(Z_{j}\right) W \pi_{\omega}\left(Z_{j}\right)=e^{i \eta} \pi_{\omega}\left(\gamma_{-}\left(Z_{j}\right)\right)=e^{i \eta} \pi_{\omega}\left(Z_{j}\right) . \tag{53}
\end{equation*}
$$

Because the left-hand side of Equation (53) is self-adjoint, so must be the right-hand side, which implies that $e^{i \eta}= \pm 1$. If $e^{i \eta}=1$ we are done and can take the unitary $V_{1}=\pi_{\omega}\left(Z_{j}\right) W \in \pi_{\omega}\left(\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{1}\right)^{\prime \prime}$. If $e^{i \eta}=-1$, then instead we consider $\pi_{\omega}\left(Z_{j}\right) W \Sigma$, where for any $a \in A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ with homogeneous grading $|a| \in\{0,1\}$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\pi_{\omega}\left(Z_{j}\right) W \Sigma \pi_{\omega}(a) \Sigma W \pi_{\omega}\left(Z_{j}\right) & =(-1)^{|a|} \pi_{\omega}\left(Z_{j}\right) W \pi_{\omega}(a) W \pi_{\omega}\left(Z_{j}\right) \\
& =(-1)^{|a|}(-1)^{|a|} \pi_{\omega}\left(\gamma_{-}(a)\right)=\pi_{\omega}\left(\gamma_{-}(a)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus $V_{1}=\pi_{\omega}\left(Z_{j}\right) W \Sigma \in \pi_{\omega}\left(\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{1}\right)^{\prime \prime}$ gives the required result. The last statement is Theorem 6.1.
For completeness, let us now construct the corresponding states $\omega^{P}$ on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}$ in the two settings of Proposition 6.9. If for $i=0$ or $i=1$ there is an element $V_{i} \in \pi_{\omega}\left(\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)^{i}\right)^{\prime \prime}$ such that $\pi_{\omega}\left(\gamma_{-}(a)\right)=$ $V_{i} \pi_{\omega}(a) V_{i}^{*}$, then recalling the decomposition (51) of $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}$, one can define a representation $\pi: A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P} \rightarrow$ $\mathcal{B}\left(\mathfrak{h}_{\omega}\right)$ by

$$
\pi\left(a_{0}+T a_{1}\right)=\pi_{\omega}\left(a_{0}\right)+V_{i} \pi_{\omega}\left(a_{1}\right), \quad a_{j} \in\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{car}}\right)^{j} .
$$

We then set

$$
\omega^{P}(Q)=\left\langle\Omega_{\omega}, \pi(Q) \Omega_{\omega}\right\rangle_{\mathfrak{h}_{\omega}}=\left\langle\Omega_{\omega}, \pi_{\omega}\left(a_{0}\right) \Omega_{\omega}\right\rangle_{\mathfrak{h}_{\omega}}+\left\langle\Omega_{\omega}, V_{i} \pi_{\omega}\left(a_{1}\right) \Omega_{\omega}\right\rangle_{\mathfrak{h}_{\omega}}, \quad Q=a_{0}+T a_{1} \in A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P} .
$$

For the even unitary $V_{0}$, the second term in $\omega^{P}(Q)$ will vanish as $\Omega_{\omega}$ is even and $V_{0} \pi_{\omega}\left(a_{1}\right) \Omega_{\omega}$ odd. By [48, Proposition 6.3 (ii)], $\omega^{P}$ is the unique $\Theta$-invariant pure state on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{P}$ coming from the state $\omega$ on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$. If the unitary $V_{1}$ is odd, then the second term does not vanish and $\omega^{P}$ is a sum of two states.

Let us now define a $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label for a class of pure $\Theta$-invariant states on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ that are not necessarily quasifree. The definition distinguishes the two cases considered in Proposition 6.9. Recall that $\Sigma$ is the implementation of the parity $\Theta$ in the GNS representation.

Definition 6.10 Let $\omega$ be a pure $\Theta$-invariant state on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ that is equivalent to $\omega \circ \gamma_{-}$. Further let $V \in \pi_{\omega}\left(\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{car}}\right)^{i}\right)^{\prime \prime}$ be a unitary such that $\pi_{\omega}\left(\gamma_{-}(a)\right)=V \pi_{\omega}(a) V^{*}$ for all $a \in A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$. Then a $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label of $\omega$ is assigned by $j(\omega)=(-1)^{i} \in \mathbb{Z}_{2}$ with $i=0,1$ as above, namely $\Sigma V \Sigma=(-1)^{i} V$.

Let us make some first comments on this definition. First, we note that any $V$ implementing $\gamma$ - on $\mathfrak{h}_{\omega}$ has indeed homogeneous parity by Proposition 6.9. Such a unitary $V$ is determined up to unitary equivalence and, because $\pi_{\omega}$ is irreducible, any other operator $U V U^{*}$ implementing $\gamma_{-}$is the same as $V$ up to a complex scalar of modulus one. Hence the parity of all unitaries implementing $\gamma_{-}$is constant and thus the phase-label is well-defined. Moreover, Lemma 6.8 implies that the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label is well-defined for pure and $\Theta$-invariant states that satisfy the split property. In particular, the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label is defined for any pure gapped ground state of a Hamiltonian for the form considered in Theorem 6.7. Moreover, for quasifree states the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label is linked to a $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued Fredholm index.

Proposition 6.11 Let $E$ be a basis projection and $\omega_{E}$ the corresponding pure, $\Theta$-invariant and quasifree state on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{car}}$. If $\omega$ is equivalent to $\omega \circ \gamma_{-}$, then for $J=i(2 E-1)$ and $\theta_{-}$the diagonal extension of (47),

$$
j\left(\omega_{E}\right)=j_{J}\left(\theta_{-}\right) .
$$

Proof. By Theorem 6.1, $\omega_{E}^{P}$ is pure in case (i) of Proposition 6.9 and not pure in case (ii). These cases correspond to $j\left(\omega_{E}\right)=1$ and $j\left(\omega_{E}\right)=-1$ respectively. Therefore Corollary 6.2 implies the claim.

Recalling Example 5.18 in the quasifree setting, the automorphism $\gamma_{-}$can be implemented by inserting a local half-flux through a Hamiltonian. Because the index $j(\omega)$ is a comparison between the state $\omega$ and the 'half-flux-inserted state' $\omega \circ \gamma_{-}$, if $j(\omega)=-1$, this indicates that a flux insertion induces a change in the ground state. In the quasifree setting, such a change of the ground state is detected by the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow.

We now consider some basic stability properties of the phase label. The following is a simple application of standard properties of the GNS representation of pure states.

Proposition 6.12 Let $\omega_{0}$ and $\omega_{1}$ be pure $\Theta$-invariant states on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ equivalent to $\omega_{0} \circ \gamma_{-}$and $\omega_{1} \circ \gamma_{-}$ respectively. Suppose that there is an automorphism $\eta \in \operatorname{Aut}\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right)$ commuting with $\Theta$ and $\gamma_{-}$and such that $\omega_{1}=\omega_{0} \circ \eta$. Then $j\left(\omega_{0}\right)=j\left(\omega_{1}\right)$.

The hypothesis that $\eta$ commutes with $\Theta$ and $\gamma_{-}$is quite strong, though it is sufficient to assume that $\eta$ commutes with $\Theta$ and leaves $A_{L}^{\text {car }}$ and $A_{R}^{\text {car }}$ invariant. Proposition 6.12 combined with the following remark shows that the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label is perturbatively stable, for example, when weak interactions are added to a quasifree system.

Remark 6.13 Examples of such automorphisms $\eta$ of $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ that satisfy the hypothesis of Proposition 6.12 can be constructed using the quasilocal structure of $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ and the quasiadiabatic evolution (also called the spectral flow) of uniformly gapped $C^{1}$-interactions [54]. In particular, let us consider a path of local Hamiltonians for all $X \subset \mathbb{Z}$ finite, where

$$
\mathbf{H}_{X}(s)=\mathbf{H}_{X}+\Phi_{X}(s)
$$

and the path satisfies several assumptions. First, the ground state gap of $\mathbf{H}_{X}(s)$ is required to be uniformly bounded for all $s \in[0,1]$. Furthermore, $\Phi_{X}(s) \in \mathcal{B}_{F}$ for all $s \in[0,1]$ and $X \in \mathcal{P}_{0}(\mathbb{Z})$,
where $\mathcal{B}_{F}$ is the space of strongly $C^{1}$-interactions satisfying [54, Assumption 6.12] with the additional property that $\Theta\left(\Phi_{X}(s)\right)=\Phi_{X}(s)$ and $\gamma_{-}\left(\Phi_{X}(s)\right)=\Phi_{X}(s)$ for all $s \in[0,1]$. If these assumptions are satisfied, then the results in [54, Section 6-7] (adapted to the fermionic case, where the property $\Theta\left(\Phi_{X}(s)\right)=\Phi_{X}(s)$ is crucial) guarantee the existence of an automorphism $\eta_{s}^{\Phi}$ in the infinite-volume limit that maps between the ground states on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ with the property that $\Theta \circ \eta_{s}^{\Phi}=\eta_{s}^{\Phi} \circ \Theta$ and $\gamma_{-} \circ \eta_{s}^{\Phi}=\eta_{s}^{\Phi} \circ \gamma_{-}$for all $s \in[0,1]$.

To summarise, if $j(\omega)$ is well-defined and comes from the thermodynamic limit of a finite-volume Hamiltonian $\mathbf{H}_{X}(0)$ with gapped ground state, then $j\left(\omega \circ \eta_{s}^{\Phi}\right)=j(\omega)$ for all $s \in[0,1]$. While this result shows an important stability property of the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label, the assumption that $\gamma_{-}\left(\Phi_{X}(s)\right)=\Phi_{X}(s)$ is somewhat artificial. Given a $\Theta$-invariant interaction $\Phi$, one can consider $\tilde{\Phi}=\frac{1}{2}\left(\Phi+\gamma_{-}(\Phi)\right)$ which is $\gamma_{-}$-invariant, but it is interesting to investigate to what degree the $\gamma_{-}$-invariant assumption can be lessened. One may be able to use a construction similar to [57] in order to work with paths of interactions that need not be $\gamma_{-}$-invariant.

Proposition 6.14 Let $\omega_{0}$ be a pure and $\Theta$-invariant state on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ that is equivalent to $\omega_{0} \circ \gamma_{-}$. Suppose that there is a path of states $\left\{\omega_{s}\right\}_{s \in[0,1]}$ with an associated family of Hilbert spaces $\left\{\mathfrak{h}_{\omega_{s}}\right\}_{s \in[0,1]}$, as well as unitaries $\left\{U_{s}\right\}_{s \in[0,1]}$ such that $U_{s}: \mathfrak{h}_{\omega_{0}} \rightarrow \mathfrak{h}_{\omega_{s}}$. Then, $j\left(\omega_{s}\right)=j\left(\omega_{0}\right)$ for all $s \in[0,1]$.

Proof. Given such a path of unitaries, for any $A_{s} \in \mathcal{B}\left(\mathfrak{h}_{\omega_{s}}\right)$ there is an operator $A_{0} \in \mathcal{B}\left(\mathfrak{h}_{\omega_{0}}\right)$ such that $A_{s}=U_{s} A_{0} U_{s}^{*}$. We can therefore define a representation $\pi_{\omega_{s}}=\operatorname{Ad}_{U_{s}} \circ \pi_{\omega_{0}}$. Because $\pi_{\omega_{0}}$ is irreducible, so is $\pi_{\omega_{s}}$. Furthermore, for $V_{s}=U_{s} V_{0} U_{s}^{*}, \Sigma_{s}=U_{s} \Sigma_{0} U_{s}^{*}$ one has

$$
V_{s} \pi_{\omega_{s}}(a) V_{s}=\pi_{\omega_{s}}\left(\gamma_{-}(a)\right), \quad \Sigma_{s} \pi_{\omega_{s}}(a) \Sigma_{s}=\pi_{\omega_{s}}(\Theta(a))
$$

so that

$$
\Sigma_{s} V_{s} \Sigma_{s}=U_{s} \Sigma_{0} V_{0} \Sigma_{0} U_{s}^{*}=(-1)^{\left|V_{0}\right|} V_{s} .
$$

Thus for all $s \in[0,1], j\left(\omega_{s}\right)$ is well-defined with $j\left(\omega_{s}\right)=j\left(\omega_{0}\right)$.
Results from [54] guarantee that our $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index is stable under strongly $C^{1}$-paths of interactions that are $\Theta$-symmetric, $\gamma_{-}$-symmetric and satisfy [54, Assumption 6.12]. In particular, if two pure gapped ground states $\omega_{0}$ and $\omega_{1}$ have different indices, $j\left(\omega_{0}\right)=-j\left(\omega_{1}\right)$, these ground states cannot be connected by such a path. Similarly, by Proposition 6.14 there cannot be family of unitaries of unitaries connecting $\mathfrak{h}_{\omega_{0}}$ and $\mathfrak{h}_{\omega_{1}}$.

Let us now state a stability result of the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label in the quasifree setting.
Proposition 6.15 Let $(\mathcal{H}, \Gamma)$ be a complex Hilbert space with real structure. Let $H_{0}$ and $H_{1}$ be gapped $B d G$ Hamiltonians on $\mathcal{H}$ with quasifree ground states $\omega_{E_{0}}$ and $\omega_{E_{1}}$ such that $j\left(\omega_{E_{0}}\right)$ and $j\left(\omega_{E_{1}}\right)$ are well-defined. Suppose that $H_{0}$ and $H_{1}$ can be connected by a norm-continuous path of self-adjoint Fredholm operators $[0,1] \ni t \mapsto H_{t}$ such that $\Gamma H_{t} \Gamma=-H_{t}$ for all $t \in[0,1]$. Then $j\left(\omega_{E_{0}}\right)=j\left(\omega_{E_{1}}\right)$.

Proof. By the assumptions on the path $H_{t}$, the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow $\mathrm{Sf}_{2}\left(i H_{t}\right)$ is well-defined. In particular, there is a partition $0=t_{0}<t_{1}<\ldots<t_{n}=1$ such that $\operatorname{Ind}_{2}\left(J_{t_{j}}, J_{t_{j+1}}\right)=(-1)^{\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{Ker}\left(J_{t_{j}}+J_{t_{j+1}}\right)}$ is well-defined for $J_{t_{j}}=i H_{t_{j}}\left|H_{t_{j}}\right|^{-1}$ (with an arbitrary complex structure on $\operatorname{Ker}\left(H_{t_{j}}\right)$ if needed). Now Proposition 6.11 implies that

$$
j\left(\omega_{E_{0}}\right)=j_{J_{t_{0}}}\left(\theta_{-}\right)=\operatorname{Ind}_{2}\left(J_{t_{0}}, \theta_{-} J_{t_{0}} \theta_{-}\right)
$$

with $\theta_{-}$the diagonal extension of (47). Recalling the concatenation and invariance properties of $\operatorname{Ind}_{2}$, in particular

$$
\operatorname{Ind}_{2}\left(J_{t_{j}}, J_{t_{j+1}}\right)=\operatorname{Ind}_{2}\left(J_{t_{j+1}}, J_{t_{j}}\right)=\operatorname{Ind}_{2}\left(V J_{t_{j}} V^{*}, V J_{t_{j+1}} V^{*}\right)
$$

for any unitary $V$ with $\Gamma V \Gamma=V$, we compute

$$
\begin{aligned}
j\left(\omega_{E_{0}}\right)= & \operatorname{Ind}_{2}\left(J_{t_{0}}, \theta_{-} J_{t_{0}} \theta_{-}\right) \\
= & \operatorname{Ind}_{2}\left(J_{t_{0}}, J_{t_{1}}\right) \cdots \operatorname{Ind}_{2}\left(J_{t_{n-1}}, J_{t_{n}}\right) \operatorname{Ind}_{2}\left(J_{t_{n}}, \theta_{-} J_{t_{n}} \theta_{-}\right) \operatorname{Ind}_{2}\left(\theta_{-} J_{t_{n}} \theta_{-}, \theta_{-} J_{t_{n-1}} \theta_{-}\right) \\
& \quad \times \cdots \operatorname{Ind}_{2}\left(\theta_{-} J_{t_{1}} \theta_{-}, \theta_{-} J_{t_{0}} \theta_{-}\right) \\
= & \operatorname{Ind}_{2}\left(J_{t_{n}}, \theta_{-} J_{t_{n}} \theta_{-}\right) \\
= & j\left(\omega_{E_{1}}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

as all other terms cancel.
Proposition 6.15, in comparison with Proposition 6.14, shows that in special cases we can take paths of ground states such that the GNS spaces are not unitarily equivalent, but where the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label remains constant. Furthermore, recalling Proposition 5.17, if the path $i H_{t}$ from Proposition 6.15 has a non-trivial $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow, then the spectral gap of the GNS Hamiltonians will close. Therefore, we see that in special cases the index $j(\omega)$ is invariant on paths that can close the ground state gap.

### 6.5 Changes in the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label

In Section 6.4 we introduced a $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label for a class of pure and $\Theta$-invariant states on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ and showed some basic stability properties of this label. In this section, we wish to consider to consider paths of ground states that are capable of accommodating a change in the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label. The following example from the quasifree setting gives some motivation.

Example 6.16 Recall the example of the non-interacting but infinite Kitaev chain $\mathbf{H}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(\mu, w)$ from Example 5.5. Using our results on flux insertion from Example 5.18 or alternatively using Proposition 6.3 , in the region $w=0$ and $|\mu|>\frac{1}{2}$, then the unique quasifree ground state $\omega_{E}$ is such that $j\left(\omega_{E}\right)=1$. If $\mu=0$ and $w \neq 0$, then $j\left(\omega_{E}\right)=-1$.

Recall that the BdG Hamiltonians $H_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(\mu, 0)$ and $H_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{Kit}}(0, w)$ can be related by the unitary

$$
W=\frac{i}{2}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
(\mathbf{1}+S) & i(\mathbf{1}-S) \\
i(\mathbf{1}-S) & -(\mathbf{1}+S)
\end{array}\right), \quad W^{*} W=W W^{*}=\mathbf{1}, \quad \Gamma W \Gamma=W
$$

but where $W$ does not give rise to a unitary operator between GNS spaces. Thus the two systems can be connected, but in a way where singularities emerge.

This motivates the following definition.
Definition 6.17 Let $A$ be a unital $C^{*}$-algebra. Two ground states $\left(\omega_{0}, \beta_{0}\right)$ and $\left(\omega_{1}, \beta_{1}\right)$ on $A$ are said to be connected by path of ground states if there is a family of $\mathbb{R}$-actions $\left\{\beta_{s}\right\}_{s \in[0,1]}$ and states $\left\{\omega_{s}\right\}_{s \in[0,1]}$ on $A$ such that
(i) For all $s \in[0,1], \omega_{s}$ is a ground state for $\beta_{s}$.
(ii) There is at most a finite set $S_{C}=\left\{s_{1}, \ldots, s_{N}\right\} \subset(0,1)$ such that:
(a) for all $a \in A$, the map $[0,1] \backslash S_{C} \ni s \mapsto\left\|\pi_{\omega_{s}}(a)\right\| \in[0, \infty)$ is continuous;
(b) if $h_{\omega_{s}}$ is the generator of the dynamics $\beta_{s}$ on $\mathfrak{h}_{\omega_{s}}$, the map $[0,1] \backslash S_{C} \ni s \mapsto\left\|\left(z-h_{\omega_{s}}\right)^{-1}\right\|$ is continuous for all $z \in \mathbb{C} \backslash \mathbb{R}$.

If $\tau$ is an automorphism of $A$, then the family of states $\left\{\omega_{s}\right\}_{s \in[0,1]}$ is said to be $\tau$-invariant if $\omega_{s} \circ \tau=\omega_{s}$ for all $s \in[0,1]$.

Let us further comment on this definition. For the case $A=A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$, a strongly continuous family of actions $\beta_{s}: \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \operatorname{Aut}\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\mathrm{car}}\right)$ and ground states satisfying part (i) of Definition 6.17 can be obtained by using the quasilocal structure of $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ and results from (amongst others) [54]. Condition (ii) is stronger, but allows us to study paths of operators over the different GNS spaces. Indeed, for all $a \in A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$, the map $s \mapsto \pi_{\omega_{s}}(a)$ defines a continuous section of a $C^{*}$-bundle $p: B \rightarrow[0,1] \backslash S_{C}$ with fibres $p^{-1}(s) \cong \pi_{\omega_{s}}\left(A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}\right), c f$. [68, Appendix C]. By [14, Theorem 2], condition (ii)(b) is equivalent to the spectral edges of $\sigma\left(h_{\omega_{s}}\right)$ being continuous in $s$ outside the finite points $S_{C}=\left\{s_{1}, \ldots, s_{N}\right\}$. The set $S_{C}$ can be thought of as the points where the spectral gaps of $h_{\omega_{s}}$ close. At best, one expects a fractional Hölder continuity of the spectral edges when a gap closes and condition (ii) requires that such gap closings happen at most finitely many times. See [14] for more details on the continuity of spectral edges at gap closing points.

Example 6.18 Consider a path of local and parity-symmetric Hamiltonians,

$$
\mathbf{H}(s)=\sum_{X \subset \mathbb{Z} \text { finite }} \Phi(X, s), \quad s \in[0,1],
$$

where the interactions $s \mapsto \Phi(X, s)$ are sufficiently smooth and local so that the interaction satisfies a Lieb-Robinson bound for all $s \in[0,1]$. Therefore by [54, Theorem 3.5], one obtains a dynamics

$$
\alpha_{s, t}=\lim _{X \rightarrow \mathbb{Z}} \operatorname{Ad}_{e^{i t \mathbf{H}_{X}(s)}}, \quad s \in[0,1], \quad t \in \mathbb{R} .
$$

We also require the Hamiltonians at the end points, $\mathbf{H}(0)$ and $\mathbf{H}(1)$, to be such that the weak $*$-limit of the finite-volume ground states gives a unique ground state for the dynamics on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$. Similarly, the weak $*$-limit of the finite volume ground states for all $s \in[0,1]$ will give a $\Theta$-invariant path of ground states $\left\{\omega_{s}\right\}_{s \in[0,1]}$ of $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$. If the end points of the path of ground states satisfy the split property, e.g. $\mathbf{H}(0)$ and $\mathbf{H}(1)$ are gapped interactions satisfying the conditions of Theorem 6.7, then the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label $j\left(\omega_{0}\right)$ and $j\left(\omega_{1}\right)$ can be defined. Thus, if $j\left(\omega_{0}\right) \neq j\left(\omega_{1}\right)$ the path of finite-volume Hamiltonians $\mathbf{H}(s)$ and corresponding path of ground states $\left\{\omega_{s}\right\}_{s \in[0,1]}$ can potentially model this $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label change.

Lemma 6.19 Let $\omega_{0}$ and $\omega_{1}$ be $\Theta$-invariant ground states on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ and suppose that $j\left(\omega_{0}\right)$ and $j\left(\omega_{1}\right)$ are well-defined with $j\left(\omega_{0}\right) \neq j\left(\omega_{1}\right)$. Then $\omega_{0}$ and $\omega_{1}$ cannot be connected by a $\Theta$-invariant path of pure ground states satisfying the split property and without discontinuities.

Proof. Let us suppose the contrary, so there is a family $\left\{\omega_{s}\right\}_{s \in[0,1]}$ connecting $\omega_{0}$ and $\omega_{1}$ with each $\omega_{s}$ a $\Theta$-invariant pure ground state satisfying the split property. By Lemma $6.8, \omega_{s}$ is equivalent to $\omega_{s} \circ \gamma_{-}$for all $s \in[0,1]$. Let $V_{s}$ and $\Sigma_{s}$ be the unitaries implementing $\gamma_{-}$and $\Theta$ respectively on $\mathfrak{h}_{\omega_{s}}$. By the continuity of the map $s \mapsto \pi_{\omega_{s}}\left(\gamma_{-}(a)\right)=V_{s} \pi_{\omega_{s}}(a) V_{s}^{*}$ for all $a \in A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$, the map $s \mapsto V_{s}$ is
also continuous. By the same argument, $s \mapsto \Sigma_{s}$ is continuous and, furthermore, $\Sigma_{s} \Omega_{s}=\Omega_{s}$ for all $s \in[0,1]$. By Proposition 6.9, $V_{s}$ has homogeneous parity for all $s \in[0,1]$, namely $\Sigma_{s} V_{s} \Sigma_{s}=(-1)^{\left|V_{s}\right|} V_{s}$ with $\left|V_{s}\right| \in\{0,1\}$ being the parity. In particular, $\Sigma_{s} V_{s} \Omega_{s}=(-1)^{\left|V_{s}\right|} V_{s} \Omega_{s}$. By the hypothesis, one also has $\Sigma_{0} V_{0} \Omega_{0}=\sigma V_{0} \Omega_{0}$ and $\Sigma_{1} V_{1} \Omega_{1}=-\sigma V_{1} \Omega_{1}$ for a sign $\sigma$. Thus there is at least one point $s_{0}$ with a neighbourhood $U \subset(0,1)$ such that $\Sigma_{s} V_{s}$ is a self-adjoint (resp. skew-adjoint) unitary for $s<s_{0}$ and $\Sigma_{s} V_{s}$ is a skew-adjoint (resp. self-adjoint) unitary for $s>s_{0}$. But such a change would violate the continuity of the section $\Sigma_{s} V_{s}$.

Theorem 6.20 Let $\omega_{0}$ and $\omega_{1}$ be pure $\Theta$-invariant and gapped ground states on $A_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\text {car }}$ (in particular, $j\left(\omega_{0}\right)$ and $j\left(\omega_{1}\right)$ are well-defined). Suppose that $j\left(\omega_{0}\right) \neq j\left(\omega_{1}\right)$. Let $\left\{\omega_{s}\right\}_{s \in[0,1]}$ be a $\Theta$-invariant path of ground states connecting $\omega_{0}$ and $\omega_{1}$. Then there is at least one $s_{0} \in(0,1)$ such that $\omega_{s_{0}}$ cannot come from the ground state of a $\Theta$-invariant and gapped interaction of the form (50).

If the path of ground states is constructed from a uniformly bounded path of interactions $\Phi(s)$ satisfying (50) pointwise, then the spectral gap of the infinite GNS Hamiltonian $h_{\omega_{s}}$ above 0 will close along the path.

Proof. By Lemma 6.19, there is a $s_{0} \in(0,1)$ such that either $\omega_{s_{0}}$ is not pure or $\omega_{s_{0}}$ is not split (or both).

If $\omega_{s_{0}}$ is pure and not split, then $\pi_{\omega_{s_{0}}}\left(A_{R}^{\mathrm{car}}\right)^{\prime \prime}$ is not a type I factor. By the contrapositive of Theorem 6.7, $\omega_{s_{0}}$ cannot come from the ground state of a gapped, finite-range and parity-symmetric fermionic interaction. If the path of ground sates is constructed from a uniformly bounded path of interactions $\Phi(s)$ satisfying (50) pointwise, then only the gap hypothesis of Theorem 6.7 fails. At the endpoints, $h_{\omega_{0}}$ and $h_{\omega_{1}}$ have a spectral gap above 0 . Because the spectral edges of the infinite GNS Hamiltonian are continuous outside a gap closing point [14, Theorem 2], the spectral gap above 0 of $h_{\omega_{s}}$ must therefore close as $s \rightarrow s_{0}$.

If $\omega_{s_{0}}$ is not pure, then there is a decomposition $\omega_{s_{0}}=c_{a} \omega_{a}+c_{b} \omega_{b}$. Consider then the GNS representations of $\omega_{a}$ and $\omega_{b}$ with cyclic vectors $\Omega_{\omega_{a}}$ and $\Omega_{\omega_{b}}$ which can be embedded within $\mathfrak{h}_{\omega_{s_{0}}}$. Because $\omega_{s_{0}}$ is a ground-state, both $\Omega_{\omega_{a}}$ and $\Omega_{\omega_{b}}$ are 0-energy eigenvectors of the GNS Hamiltonian $h_{\omega_{s_{0}}}$. As the state is not pure, these eigenvectors are distinct and the spectrum is degenerate at 0 . Because the endpoints $h_{\omega_{0}}$ and $h_{\omega_{1}}$ have non-degenerate 0 -energy spectrum with a non-zero spectral gap, the continuity of the spectral edges outside gap closing points implies that for any $\gamma>0$ one can find a sufficiently small $\varepsilon$ such that $\sigma\left(h_{\omega_{s_{0}-\varepsilon}}\right) \cap(0, \gamma)$ is non-empty.

### 6.6 Concluding remarks

We have defined a $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index for one-dimensional many-body fermionic gapped ground states. While some basic properties of this index have been studied, let us list some additional questions that we hope to investigate further in future work.

1. As already stated, Propositions $6.12,6.14$ and Remark 6.13 have shown stability properties of the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index, though the assumptions are quite strong. A more systematic treatment similar to recent studies of $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-indices of ground states of spin chains satisfying the split property with time-reversal or reflection symmetry [51, 57, 58] will hopefully give more optimised results.
Similarly, the definition of a path of gapped ground states is quite rigid and a result similar to Theorem 6.20 may hold for a weaker notion of a path of ground states.
2. If one takes a half-infinite lattice $\mathbb{N}$, then $\gamma_{-}=\mathrm{Id}$ and the phase label is trivial. Hence, a different method to define the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label is required in half-infinite chains. For one-dimensional spin systems, the left and right degeneracy of edge ground states in half-infinite chains is a complete invariant of the $C^{1}$-classification of frustration-free and translation invariant interactions [56]. One can similarly investigate such a characterisation in fermionic systems. Furthermore, if a connection between edge states in half-infinite systems with the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label for $\mathbb{Z}$-lattices can be established, this would give an interesting bulk-boundary correspondence in the interacting setting.
3. For the case of quasifree ground states on the full discrete line, the insertion of a flux quanta leads to a non-trivial $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow if the ground state is topologically non-trivial. The $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label $j(\omega)$ extends this probing of the state $\omega$ to a wider class of ground states, even though only the "half-flux added" state is used and not the flux insertion itself. This flux insertion was studied numerically in an interacting finite chain in [43] and the same behavior of level crossing was found for the many-body states. For an infinite chain, the flux insertion implemented as in Section 3.10 leads to a path of Hamiltonians and dynamics that fits into the framework of Definition 6.17, but much more is actually expected to hold, see Remark 5.19. To show a Fredholm-like property for flux insertion for an interaction chain is an interesting open problem. If so, one could introduce a $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-spectral flow of the infinite GNS Hamiltonian. A more systematic study of such a $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-flow would give a more clear picture of an index-theoretic interpretation of the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-phase label. Such a viewpoint offers possible future directions for the studies of phase labels and invariants of interacting systems using flux insertions and higherdimensional analogues.
4. We have considered an operator algebraic formulation of gapped one-dimensional fermionic ground states associated with parity conserving Hamiltonians. A natural extension is to consider fermionic SPT phases for other symmetries and group actions. It was shown by Ogata [57, Appendix B] and more recently in [59] that for $G$-symmetric ground states of spin chains with the split property, there is a projective representation of $G$ on a GNS space whose cohomology class is invariant under the quasiadiabatic evolution of gapped symmetric Hamiltonians. We would expect a similar result to hold in the fermionic case that takes into account the parity symmetry. This has already been studied for fermionic matrix product states [20, 33, 37, 66].

Acknowledgements: This work is supported by the DFG and the World Premier International Research Center Initiative (WPI), MEXT, Japan. CB is supported by a JSPS Grant-in-Aid for EarlyCareer Scientists (No. 19K14548) and thanks Nick Bultinck, Hosho Katsura and Yoshiko Ogata for helpful discussions. Both authors thank the Erwin Schrödinger Institute program Bivariant K-Theory in Geometry and Physics and HSB the Institut-Mittag-Leffler for hospitality and support during the production of this work. Finally, we thank the referee for a careful reading and whose comments have greatly improved the manuscript.

## References

[1] H. Araki, On quasifree states of CAR and Bogoliubov automorphisms, Publ. Res. Inst. Math. Sci. 6, 385-442 (1970/71).
[2] H. Araki, D. E. Evans, On a $C^{*}$-algebra approach to phase transition in the two-dimensional Ising model. Comm. Math. Phys., 91, no. 4, 489-503 (1983).
[3] H. Araki, T. Matsui, Ground states of the XY-model, Comm. Math. Phys., 101, 213-245 (1985).
[4] M. F. Atiyah, V. Patodi, I. M. Singer, Spectral asymmetry and Riemannian geometry, III. Proc. Camb. Phil. Soc., 79, 71-99 (1976).
[5] M. F. Atiyah, I. M. Singer. Index theory for skew-adjoint Fredholm operators. Inst. Hautes Études Sci. Publ. Math., 37, 5-26 (1969).
[6] J. Avron, R. Seiler, B. Simon, The index of a pair of projections, J. Funct. Anal., 120, 220-237 (1994).
[7] S. Bachmann, A. Bols, W. De Roeck, M. Fraas, Quantization of conductance in gapped interacting systems, Ann. Henri Poincaré, 19, no. 3, 695-708 (2018).
[8] S. Bachmann, A. Bols, W. De Roeck, M. Fraas, A many-body index for quantum charge transport, Comm. Math. Phys., online first (2019). https://doi.org/10.1007/s00220-019-03537-x
[9] S. Bachmann, W. De Roeck, M. Fraas, The adiabatic theorem and linear response theory for extended quantum systems, Comm. Math. Phys., 361, no. 3, 997-1027 (2018).
[10] S. Bachmann, S. Michalakis, B. Nachtergaele, R. Sims, Automorphic equivalence of gapped phases of quantum lattice systems, Comm. Math. Phys., 309, no. 3, 835-871 (2012).
[11] S. Bachmann, B. Nachtergaele, On gapped phases with a continuous symmetry and boundary operators, J. Stat. Phys. 154, 91-112 (2014).
[12] S. Bachmann, Y. Ogata, $C^{1}$-classification of gapped parent Hamiltonians of quantum spin chains, Comm. Math. Phys., 338, no. 3, 1011-1042 (2015).
[13] R. J. Baxter, Exactly solved models in statistical mechanics. (Academic Press, Inc. [Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, Publishers], London, 1982).
[14] S. Beckus, J. Bellissard, Continuity of a the spectrum of a field of self-adjoint operators, Ann. Henri Poincaré, 17, 3425-3442 (2016).
[15] J. P. Blaizot, G. Ripka, Quantum Theory of Finite Fermi Systems, (MIT Press, Boston, 1985).
[16] C. Bourne, A. L. Carey, M. Lesch, A. Rennie, The KO-valued spectral flow for skew-adjoint Fredholm operators, arXiv:1907.04981 (2019).
[17] O. Bratelli, D. R. Robinson, Operators Algebras and Quantum Statistical Mechanics 1, 2nd edition, (Springer, Berlin, 1997).
[18] O. Bratelli, D. R. Robinson, Operators Algebras and Quantum Statistical Mechanics 2, 2nd edition, (Springer, Berlin, 1997).
[19] J.-B. Bru, W. de Siqueira Pedra, Lieb-Robinson Bounds for Multi-Commutators and Applications to Response Theory, (Springer Briefs in Mathematical Physics 13, 2017).
[20] N. Bultinck, D. J Williamson, J. Haegeman, F. Verstraete, Fermionic matrix product states and one-dimensional topological phases, Phys. Rev. B, 95, 075108 (2017).
[21] N. Bultinck, D. J. Williamson, J. Haegeman, F. Verstraete, Fermionic projected entangled-pair states and topological phases, J. Phys. A, 51, 025202 (2017).
[22] J. S. Calderón-García, A. F. Reyes-Lega, Majorana fermions and orthogonal complex structures, Modern Phys. Lett. A, 33, no. 14, 1840001, 12 pages (2018).
[23] A. L. Carey, D. M. O'Brien, Automorphisms of the infinite-dimensional Clifford algebra and the Atiyah-Singer mod 2 index, Topology, 22, 437-448 (1983).
[24] A. L. Carey, J. Phillips, H. Schulz-Baldes, Spectral flow for skew-adjoint Fredholm operators, J. Spec. Theory, 9, no. 1, 137-170 (2019).
[25] A. L. Carey, H. Schulz-Baldes, Spectral flow of monopole insertion in topological insulators, Comm. Math. Phys., 370, no. 3, 895-923 (2019).
[26] M. Cha, P. Naaijkens, B. Nachtergaele, On the stability of charges in infinite quantum spin systems, Comm. Math. Phys., 373, 219-264 (2020).
[27] G. De Nittis, H. Schulz-Baldes, Spectral flows associated to flux tubes, Ann. Henri Poincaré, 17, 1-35 (2016).
[28] G. De Nittis, H. Schulz-Baldes, The non-commutative topology of two-dimensional dirty superconductors, J. Geometry and Physics, 124, 100-123 (2018).
[29] J. Dixmier, $C^{*}$-Algebras, (North Holland Publishing Company, Amsterdam, 1977).
[30] N. Doll, H. Schulz-Baldes, N. Waterstraat, Parity as $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-valued spectral flow, Bull. London Math. Soc., 51, 836-852 (2019).
[31] S. Doplicher, R. Longo, Standard and split inclusions of von Neumann algebras. Invent. Math., 75, 493-536 (1984).
[32] D. E. Evans, Y. Kawahigashi, Quantum Symmetries and Operator Algebras, (Oxford University Press, Oxford, 1998).
[33] L. Fidkowski, A. Kitaev, Topological phases of fermions in one dimension, Phys. Rev. B, 83, 075103 (2011).
[34] D. S. Freed, M. J. Hopkins, Reflection positivity and invertible topological phases, Geom. Topol., to appear, arXiv:1604.06527.
[35] A. Giuliani, V. Mastropietro, M. Porta, Universality of the Hall conductivity in interacting electron systems, Comm. Math. Phys. 349, no. 3, 1107-1161 (2017): .
[36] J. Großmann and H. Schulz-Baldes, Index pairings in presence of symmetries with applications to topological insulators, Comm. Math. Phys., 343, no. 2, 477-513 (2016).
[37] A. Kapustin, A. Turzillo, M. You, Spin topological field theory and fermionic matrix product states, Phys. Rev. B, 98, 125101 (2018).
[38] M. B. Hastings, An area law for one-dimensional quantum systems, J. Stat. Mech. Theory Exp., no. 8, P08024, 14 pages (2007).
[39] M. B. Hastings, T. Koma, Spectral gap and exponential decay of correlations, Comm. Math. Phys., 265, 781-804 (2006).
[40] M. B. Hastings, S. Michalakis, Quantization of Hall conductance for interacting electrons on a torus, Comm. Math. Phys., 334, 433-471 (2015).
[41] T. Kato, Perturbation Theory for Linear Operators, 2nd edition, (Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 1976).
[42] H. Katsura, D. Schuricht, M. Takahashi. Exact ground states and topological order in interacting Kitaev/Majorana chains. Phys. Rev. B, 92, 115137 (2015).
[43] K. Kawabata, R. Kobayashi, N. Wu, H. Katsura. Exact zero modes in twisted Kitaev chains. Phys. Rev. B, 95, 195140 (2017).
[44] A. Kitaev, Unpaired Majorana fermions in quantum wires, Physics-Uspekhi, 44, 131 (2001).
[45] A. Kitaev, Anyons in an exactly solved model and beyond, Ann. Physics, 321, no. 1, 2-111 (2006).
[46] J. Kurmann, H. Thomas, G. Müller, Antiferromagnetic long-range order in the anisotropic quantum spin chain, Physica A, 112, 235 (1982).
[47] T. Matsui, The split property and symmetry breaking of the quantum spin chain, Comm. Math. Phys., 218, 393-416 (2001).
[48] T. Matsui, Boundedness of entanglement entropy and split property of quantum spin chains, Rev. Math. Phys., 26, no. 9, 1350017 (2013).
[49] S. Michalakis, J. P. Zwolak, Stability of frustration-free Hamiltonians, Comm. Math. Phys., 322, no. 2, 277-302 (2013).
[50] D. Monaco, S. Teufel, Adiabatic currents for interacting fermions on a lattice, Rev. Math. Phys., 31, no. 3, 1950009 (2019).
[51] A. Moon, Automorphic equivalence preserves the split property, J. Funct. Anal., 277, no. 10, 3653-3672 (2019).
[52] A. Moon, B. Nachtergaele, Stability of gapped ground state phases of spins and fermions in one dimension, J. Math. Phys., 59, 091415 (2018).
[53] B. Nachtergaele, R. Sims, A. Young, Lieb-Robinson bounds, the spectral flow, and stability of the spectral gap for lattice fermion systems, in Mathematical Problems in Quantum Physics, Vol. 717 of Contemp. Math., (Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, 2018).
[54] B. Nachtergaele, R. Sims, A. Young, Quasi-locality bounds for quantum lattice systems. Part 1. Lieb-Robinson bounds, quasi-local maps, and spectral flow automorphisms, J. Math. Phys., 60, 061101 (2019).
[55] P. T. Nam, M. Napiorkowski, J. P. Solovej, Diagonalization of bosonic quadratic Hamiltonians by Bogoliubov transformations, J. Funct. Anal., 270, 4340-4368 (2016).
[56] Y. Ogata, A class of asymmetric gapped Hamiltonians on quantum spin chains and its characterization III, Comm. Math. Phys., 352, no. 3, 1205-1263 (2017).
[57] Y. Ogata, $A \mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index of symmetry protected topological phases with time reversal symmetry for quantum spin chains, Comm. Math. Phys., online first (2019). https://doi.org/10.1007/ s00220-019-03521-5
[58] Y. Ogata, $A \mathbb{Z}_{2}$-index of symmetry protected topological phases with reflection symmetry for quantum spin chains, arXiv:1904.01669 (2019).
[59] Y. Ogata, A classification of pure states on quantum spin chains satisfying the split property with on-site finite group symmetries, arXiv:1908.08621 (2019).
[60] Y. Ogata, H. Tasaki, Lieb-Schultz-Mattis type theorems for quantum spin chains without continuous symmetry, Comm. Math. Phys., 372, 951-962 (2019).
[61] J. Phillips, Self-adjoint Fredholm operators and spectral flow. Canad. Math. Bull., 39, 460-467 (1996).
[62] E. Prodan, H. Schulz-Baldes, Bulk and Boundary Invariants for Complex Topological Insulators: From K-Theory to Physics, (Springer International, Cham, 2016).
[63] D. Shale, W. F. Stinespring, Spinor representations of infinite orthogonal groups, J. Math. Mech., 14, 315-322 (1965).
[64] K. Shiozaki, H. Shapourian, S. Ryu, Many-body topological invariants in fermionic symmetryprotected topological phases: Cases of point group symmetries, Phys. Rev. B, 95, 205139 (2017).
[65] M. Takesaki, Theory of Operator Algebras I, (Springer, Berlin, 2002).
[66] A. Turzillo, M. You, Fermionic matrix product states and one-dimensional short-range entangled phases with antiunitary symmetries, Phys. Rev. B, 99, 035103 (2019).
[67] A. Wassermann, Operator algebras and conformal field theory. III. Fusion of positive energy representations of LSU( $N$ ) using bounded operators, Invent. Math., 133, no. 3, 467-538 (1998).
[68] D. P. Williams, Crossed Products of $C^{*}$-algebras, (American Mathematical Society, Rhode Island, 2007).
[69] C. Z. Xiong, Minimalist approach to the classification of symmetry protected topological phases, J. Phys. A, 51, no. 44, 445001, 71 pages (2018).


[^0]:    *email: chris.bourne@tohoku.ac.jp, schuba@mi.uni-erlangen.de

